町をつくる能力!?
～異世界に
つくろう日本都市～
ルンパルンパ
Presented by Runparunpa
illustration 碧 風羽
宝島社

The Ability to Make Town!?

~Let's Make a Japanese Town in Different World~

by Runpa Runpa

Novel Updates

Translator: Rebirth Online World

Epub : TrolloWN/LN EPUB

Illustrations

Chapter 001 - Prologue ①

I was holding onto the ceiling straps of the train while dressed in my usual suit in the morning, in the midst of travelling to my workplace.

My name is Nobuhide Fujiwara, a trivial temporary employee who will celebrate his twentieth birthday soon.

“That’s why..!”

“No way!? Seriously!?”

Upon hearing the cheerful voices of the students sitting on the seats, I couldn’t help but wish.

‘Even if it’s only a little bit, please share your spirit with me.’

Then, I closed my eyes quietly, trying to take a quick nap before the train reaches the next station because I stayed up late last night.

The clinking and clanking, and the shaking of the train tempts me to enter the dreamland.

Before long, the shaking of the train disappeared. Even the feeling of the strap on my right hand disappeared.

What... What is going on?

I can feel a sense of discomfort at my right hand, and when I opened my eyes, my voice leaked out unconsciously.

“Ha?”

Well I can’t help it.

I should have been on the train till a while ago, but now, I’m in a white space.

“Wh-What is this place!?”

“The train! Where is the seat?”

“It’s a lie! Dre... Is it a dream?”

Other than me, there were other people here as well. All of them were equally surprised.

From my rough estimation, there’s about one hundred people here.

I recognize some of them. They were the people who were in the same compartment as me.

The students especially, started to make a ruckus. There were several adults, including me, who were confused as well, but we didn’t kick up a fuss.

It might be because of the experience gained from age... No, it’s probably because there’s already a group of students kicking up a fuss beforehand.

After all, I’m not someone who can speak out in a community.

Anyway, I feel a little relieved since it wasn’t only me who had been transported to this weird place.

“Ho ho ho ho!”

I heard the rough laughter of an old man.

‘What was that?’

I thought while looking at the direction where the voice came from.

Naturally, all the people around me also looked at the man who was laughing

in this time of emergency.

What we saw was an old man with white hair holding a walking stick. He donned pure white clothing. His face looked like it had been carved from marble, and he has blue eyes that's hardly seen on the Japanese.

"Everyone, please don't panic." The old man tried to soothe us before laughing again. "Ho ho ho ho!"

"What's so funny?!" One of the students shouted in anger.

Looking at this male student's sturdy body, it seemed like he had been doing some kind of sports.

‘What a stupid student.’ I thought.

Because this old man in front of us is clearly an abnormal one.

In other words, we should guess that our current situation has something to do with this weird old man.

Furthermore, if I were to explain this in detail... There’s close to one hundred people on this space. There is no way a human’s power would be able to transfer this many people in an instant.

If there’s someone who can do it, then he would be...

“ Ho ho ho! I am sorry.” He didn’t seem to be reflecting even though he was apologizing, and laughed again.

The student from before wanted to complain again, but was held back by the boy who was wearing the same uniform as him. It seems like they were classmates.

As expected, it seems like there are some people who know that there is something special about this old man.

The old man started to talk again.

“I was the one who transferred you here.”

That remark was no good.

For the people who haven’t realized that this old man is a special existence, it will just add fuel to the fire.

“Wh....! Don’t fuck with me! Return us back now!”

“That’s right! Bring us back!”

In some places, voices that asked to return back were heard.

Looks like there are people who can’t understand the current situation... I sighed.

Now then, what should I do?

We should avoid angering the old man by all means, because it can be said that the old man holds our fates in his palm.

Now then, what should I do?

..... I have decided. Even though it’s impolite, I have no choice but to do it.

“I... I am sorry!!” I kneeled and placed both of my hands on the ground, and put my head on ground.

That’s right, I am performing a dogeza.

“Please, forgive our rude behavior!” With a voice louder than anyone else in this place, I apologized to the old man.

The entire area became quiet.

Because my head was touching the ground, I didn’t know that everyone was looking at me in wonder.

When I think so, I feel awful.

“Please, please, forgive us! Have mercy!” I begged.

Well, whatever. Anyway, all I have to do is apologize to the old man in order to not spoil his mood.

Then, I heard the sound of laughter.

What a cruel thing.

A small laugh started to spread out like a ripple in the calm water, and the laughter starting rising from everywhere.

“Pfftt, this person is really doing a dogeza! This is the first time I’ve ever seen it!”

“Seriously, it’s so lame!”

“I can’t stop laughing!”

Furthermore, I can hear humiliating words here and there.

Is this what they call youth?

But, I still continued lower my head. This is called the stubbornness of an adult.

And then, when a voice spoke to me, all the students who were laughing at my apparently absurd act stopped immediately.

It was the voice of the old man

“You can raise your head.”

“Ye-Yes!” I replied.

As told, I raised my head.

“Ho ho ho. You didn’t need to do this since I didn’t mind it at all. Now, it will be better if you stand up too.” The old man stated.

“Ye-Yes! Excuse me!” I did as ordered.

I feel grateful for the old man words.

It seem like he has a broad mind.

“Fufu, it was pointless. So, don’t mind.”

I stood up while hearing that brown haired brat's annoying remark.

“Well, it seems like everybody has calmed down now, so I can continue my story.” The old man said.

Right now, the situation had calmed so much that it was hard to believe that there was commotion not long ago.

Everyone was listening to the old man’s story. After all, we can’t do anything if we don’t know anything.

“Now then, I will introduce myself first. I am God.” He declared.

Everyone was stunned by his introduction.

As expected. However, when it came from his own mouth, I was stunned as well.

“Wh... What?! How come a god’s with us..?!” When that sports student heard the word god, he started to shout.

I don’t know if it’s because of pride or something, but do you think it’s cool to have such an attitude towards a god?

“Fumu... Well, it’s because you guys will be living in another world.” He announced.

Everyone exclaimed with the word ‘Ha?’, because they can’t understand the words of the god.

Gradually, they started to understand the words of the god.

The meaning was, he wasn’t the god which resided in the world where Japan was.

“Don’t said something so convenient!”

“This is tyranny!”

The dissatisfaction started to rise from one end to the other, but the god only

answered with a laugh.

It’s a waste of time no matter what you say to the god. Before long, the voices of complaint weakened.

And then, a female student called out to the god with a loud voice.

“Ano..!”

At that, everyone calmed down once again.

“Un... Until when..?” She asked timidly.

“Until you die.” When he replied the question of the female student, the

answer rubbed some people the wrong way.

“Don’t fuck with me!” The anger wasn’t from only one person, but many.

However, it didn’t result in violence since they feared the title of god.

Even though they raised their voices to complain, it was only to preserve their pride because it was allowed earlier.

I didn’t imitate them, and just watched them from the side.

And then, the god said something after laughing again.

“I am not joking with you. After all, everyone here was going to die because of

a train derailment.”

A huge bomb was dropped by the god like it was nothing.

Chapter 002 - Prologue ②

“We were supposed to die..? After a train derailment?”

“Yo-You are kidding, right?”

Words of unrest started to escape from everyone’s mouths.

They didn’t believe the words from the god. No, they didn’t want to believe it.

I’m the same too.

Death.... I thought it would be a story that would only be told in the far

future.

“That is the truth. I can return all of you back to your original world, but... Do you want to return just to die?” The god asked with a friendly expression.

When he put it in that way, there was no way we could complain anymore.

I could only feel appalled after that.

“Excuse me, I wonder if it is okay..?” An office worker-like man raised his hand and asked for permission from the god to ask a question.

“You may speak.” The god nodded.

“I took the train with my co-worker. Although I can’t find her here, is it correct to say that she is alive?” He asked.

“Umu. Your guess is right.” The god replied.

“I see... Thank you.” The office worker lowered his head politely.

Upon looking at his joyful face, it was obvious that he felt relieved. Looking at how much more worried he was about his co-worker, and it was a woman to boot, than about himself... She’s probably someone that he likes. He would probably be called a good guy.

“Then, let’s get back to the topic. As I said just now, you will be sent to a different world. You can refuse it. However, at the same time, you will die in your original world.” The god explained.

There was no one who rejected his proposal.

Thus, the explanation continued.

“The place where you will go to is something like the medieval ages in your world. However, with the exception of humankind, there are also various races who have their own languages. There is magic on that side as well.”

“Su-Such a world... It’s dangerous..!”

“It’s certainly dangerous, but there are no demons...” The god lifted up his cane after speaking.

Immediately, there were hundreds of cards with the equal height and width forming a line floating in the air next to the god.

The crowd started stirring and fidgeting. Everybody was surprised by the miracle they saw for the first time.

Only the backs of the cards were facing everyone.

“I’ll give you a power. The power that I will give to you is written on these cards. There are abilities, weapons, and positions. What is written on the card that you pull will be your power from now on. Well, it will be much easier if you actually try it.” The god waved his hand. “—— Here!”

Before I noticed it, one of the students already stood in front of the cards.

“E-Eh? The male student panicked.

It was teleportation.

After witnessing another miracle with our own eyes, everyone, including me, held their breaths.

“You can choose from one of these cards. The card that you pick will be the ability that will be bestowed unto you.” The god stated.

“Eh?! Why!? Why me!?” The male student shrunk back at his unexpected role.

It was not surprising. There might be some danger for the first player after all.

I gave my condolences from the depths of my heart. However, I wouldn’t want to be his substitute.

“If you don’t choose, would you like to be sent to another world without any

abilities at all?” The god asked.

“Eh, no! Wait! ...Then, then... This one!” The boy hurriedly took one of the cards and flipped it up after hearing that remark from the god.

What was written was.

“Spear talent, big..?” He muttered.

However, I wasn’t able to hear him because his voice was too low.

Then the god said.

“Spear talent, big. That’s the ability to excel in using spears. Then ___”

With a “paa” sound and a flashing light, the student disappeared the very next moment.

“That person just now has already been sent to the other world. You don’t need to worry. I will not suddenly send you to a dangerous place. I will send you to a place where you can receive assistance from the very beginning. I will also be considerate and pair you with a different person who pulled a lower grade card.” The god assured us. “Ah, that’s right. I have not shared the reason for doing this. This is just a trivial experiment. When you go reach the other world, I will not intervene. Now then, if you don’t have any useless questions for me to answer... I want to move everyone quickly.”

Then, a new person appeared right in front of the cards. He was slightly panicked after watching the affair from before, and picked a card before the god said anything. Then, he left this place after another blinding ray of light appeared.

From there on, one after another, the work was carried out silently, probably because everyone understood that this situation was unavoidable.

Occasionally, some people shouted that they wanted to redo their picking, but nothing happened.

...What kind of the bad card made those people want to redo the selection? This made me anxious.

Before long, the hundred people who were here had decreased to twenty.

I haven’t been called up yet.

I started to get used to the shimmering light around me.

Ten more people disappeared, but I was still here.

I am not so stupid as to not be able to understand the present situation. From the original one hundred people, was it an accident that I was one of the last ten remaining?

I think that the answer is no.

Also, there was another person remaining, the office worker who spoke politely to the god.

It was clearly intentional.

I wonder what the meaning of this might be.

“God! I apologise for my impoliteness so far!” A student did a dogeza.

Amongst all of the people, the only ones left were the office workers, me and the male student, which caused the student to worry.

Now, there were only the office workers and I left. When I thought about it, it must be because of our behaviour.

But then, the person who was chosen to pick the next card was the student.

“You should hurry up and choose.” The god didn’t answer him and just said this indifferently.

When the male student saw this, he was displeased and choose the card before disappearing.

h

I wonder if that's what it is, a nice moment to present unjustified hostility.

Afterwards, one after another, they disappeared. What remained were me and the polite office worker.

Is my turn next, or is it the one after that?

Cold sweat started to soak my back as I wondered, and I gulped audibly.

Incidentally, the office worker and I didn’t come to face to face so far because the god strictly prohibited whispering.

I think it would be awkward too, if we looked at each other and talked. I think the other party was also thinking the same thing.

It could be said that we can read each other’s minds.

The next one who was called to draw a card was the office worker.

“Fumu... Good. So it turned out like this...” The god murmured to himself.

Then, the number of cards decreased quickly.

“Before, the cards you can select ranged from 1 star to 10 stars. If your ability is powerful, there will be many stars accorded to it, and vice versa for the ones with low number of stars.” The god explained. “For the two of you, I will remove all the cards that have less than three stars.”

As I expected, there was a significance as to why we were the only ones left.

“...Is it because I kneeled and apologized?” I asked.

“No. It’s because you guys realized ahead of time that this situation is significant. That is what makes you different from those who were chosen earlier.” The god replied.

There was nothing more to be said, and the office worker chose his card and disappeared.

Before I realised it, I had already been teleported to face the cards.

Chapter 003 - Prologue ③

“Well, it’s your turn now.” The god stated.

As the god said this, all of the cards in front of me flipped up.

Oou.... What service is this? Surely, it is not to choose as many as I like, right?

I feel somewhat sorry for the other people who had to choose with the cards facing down.

“As I said to the person before, there are a lot of abilities with many stars.

Now, you can choose one from anything you like. Of course, you don’t need to worry about the time. Unlike the rest, you can take your time to choose.” The god instructed.

“Y-Yes!” Probably because I was too fired up, I answered excitedly in front of the god.

Nevertheless, there are a lot of cards here.

I checked what’s on the left side first.

【Sword Skill】【Small】【★】

【Sword Skill】【Middle】【★★】

【Sword Skill】【Big】【★★★】

【Sword Skill】【Extra big】【★★★★】

Strangely, even though there was some distance, I could see what was written on it clearly.

At the left is the [Sword Skill] line, and at the right are the lines for [Spear Skill] and [Bow Skill]. They were cards on how to use the respective weapons.

Oh, there’s also something like this.

【All-Weapon Skill】【Small】【★★】

【All-Weapon Skill】【middle】【★★★】

【All-Weapon Skill】【Big】【★★★★】

【All-Weapon Skill】【Extra Big】【★★★★★】

However, the [Small] one was two stars, while the [Extra Big] one was five stars.

Because it was said that the maximum number of stars was ten, this five star card makes the ability seem unreliable.

I shifted my gaze to the next cards.

Physical strength, horse-riding... There are various training cards lined up which I ignored. Then, I start to pay attention to the next few.

【The ability of Fire Magic】【Small】【★★】

【The ability of Fire Magic】【Medium】【★★★】

【The ability of Fire Magic】【Big】【★★★★】

【The ability of Fire Magic】【Extra Big】【★★★★★★】

Magic.... This word made me excited.

When looking at the number of stars on the side, Magic>Weapon since they have much more stars than the ones from the weapon system

When I continued looking, I found that there were Fire, Water, Wood, Metal, and Earth systems. There were also others, like Wind, Thunder, Light, Darkness, and Summon.

In addition, there are similar cards of another magnitude as well. Like...

【All Magic Ability】【Small】【★★★★】

【All Magic Ability】【Medium】【★★★★★】

【All Magic Ability】【Big】【★★★★★★】

【All Magic Ability】【Extra Big】【★★★★★★★】

Ooh, this is amazing!

The [Small] was four stars while [Extra Big] was seven stars.

It was the one with the highest number of stars till now.

Even though he was yearning for supernatural power like magic, he decided to keep this aside for now, and shifted his line of sight.

“....Pftt!” While in front of the god, I unconsciously let out a burst of laughter.

It was because...

【Common sword】【★】

This is foul play.

Surely, even if I get this, I will be in trouble as well. In addition, the next one was....

【Pretty Good Sword】【★】

There was no difference in stars between [Common Sword] and [Pretty Good Sword]. In other words, you can think of [Common Sword] as more worthless than one star.

If one day I pulled such a card... Ah, I got it.

The people that wanted to redo the drawing, they probably drew something like this.

When I looked at the other cards near it, there was also a [Common Shield] card with it. Of course, it was also a one star card.

By the way, this is what the other cards in the sword system looks like.

【Hero Sword】【★★】

【Sword of Valor】【★★★】

【Legendary Sword】【★★★★★】

Only [Legendary Sword] has many stars, while [Sword of Valour] has the same number of stars as [The ability of Fire Magic] [Medium].

However, no matter how good the sword is, it all depends on the user.

Well, I wonder what this [Legendary Sword] is. There seems to be a description written on it.

[A sword that carries the power of nature. When you wish for it, it can cast magic.]

I see. It’s a sword that surpasses other swords. If it’s like this, I am convinced of its five star tier abilities.

However, I don’t think I want it, because it only has five stars. If it was

compared with the【All Magic Ability】【Extra Big】which has seven stars, the magic inside it seems quite weak.

Next to the sword line is another weapon line. Afterwards, there is a protective gear line. Next to that were medicine and miscellaneous stuff. After all of that was over, there were cats and dogs, as well as other animals such as horses or sheep lined up.

For example there were horses like this...

【Common Horse with saddle】【★】

【Good Horse with saddle】【★】

【Excellent Horse with saddle】【★】

【Rare Horse with saddle】【★★】

After reading the explanation, it seems like the animal will unconditionally

become your pet.

By the way, all the cat cards were one star.

Soon, all the names changed into something related fierce beasts. All of these creatures were something I heard from stories and fairy tales.

Then, the animal system cards ended with something like this.

【Red Dragon】【★★★★★★★】

It seems quite dangerous. In the first place, even if I have a dragon as my pet, it will be a problem to find food for it. Thus, it’s out of the question.

With this, the cards from the animal system ended.

Finally, the end was in sight. There were only a few more cards left.

What was next was this...

【Status Open】【★★★★★】

【Become a Hero】【★★★★★★】

【Become a Man of Valor】【★★★★★★】

【Become a Demon King】【★★★★★★★★】

【Become a Dungeon Master】【★★★★★★★★】

The difference in stars was so obvious.

I mean what is [Status Open]?

【Status Open】【★★★★★】

[The ability to look at the status of oneself and other people. It can clarify everything from the three sizes to hidden talents to diseases.]

Oh, this might be quite a good one. If I was a doctor, it would be quite a handy ability.

On the other hand, I better not touch【Become a Hero】,【Become a Man of Valor】, or【Become a Demon King】.

【Become a Dungeon Master】description....

[Become a Dungeon Master and create the strongest dungeon by using the souls of the explorers who died in the dungeon to produce strong monsters.

Because the quality of the souls are important, please use the carrot and stick policy properly. Kill them after you grow them up!]

Urgh... What a dangerous ability. It’s an impossible ability for me who lived in a peaceful nation.

Other than this...

【Become a Minister】【★★★】

【Become a Lord】【★★★★★】

【Become a King】【★★★★★★★】

I wonder why they put that many stars for【Become a King】.

It has even more stars than [Become a Man of Valor]. After all, the king is someone who establishes a country and rules over it.

As they say, two hands can’t win against four hands. Even if their class is [Man of Valor], they still can’t oppose the king.

In other words, individual ability isn’t worth that much. In fact, the power of magic might be much weaker than what I imagined in the real world.

There were still some cards remaining.

【Instant Healing Ability】【★★★★★★★★★★】

【Eternal Youth】【★★★★★★★★★★】

There were so many stars that I needed to count them one by one.

The number of stars was ten. In other words, these are the best abilities.

Both of them were abilities that are connected to life. I can’t help but say that these are splendid abilities.

【Instant Healing Ability】can be used when my life is at risk.

【Become Eternal Youth】would allow me to live forever.

However, there was another card with ten stars as well.

It was the last one.

【Ability to Make a Town】【★★★★★★★★★★】

.....I wonder what this [Ability to Make Town] is. I read the description.

【This ability is as its name suggests. With the initial 100 billion yen, the money will be converted into building a town. The time will be set in the early Edo era. When the population exceeds ten thousand people, you will need to invest 1 trillion yen to move into the modern era. If your population reaches one hundred thousand people, you will need to invest 100 trillion yen... If you run the town well, you will earn money. Let’s develop a town!】

...The god said that it was a world with the setting of the medieval era of Europe.

If I think about it carefully, for me who has lived in a modern society, even if I become a king there, it seems like I will have to shoulder a lot of responsibility.

All the conveniences, entertainment, and meals of this civilization... I will run out of it.

Frankly speaking, I can assert that a citizen of the modern society lives a much better life than a king in the medieval era.

As the saying goes, there is no place like home. Since I know about the existence of this card, I want to live in a world filled with those things once again.

“I have decided, I will take this!” Without hesitation, I choose the card【Ability to make a town】.

Chapter 004 - Town planning ①

“Then, I will send you away.” The god said when I chose the card.

At the same time, I was surrounded by a dazzling light, and closed my eyes.

I wanted to say a few words of thanks to the god, but it seems like I lost my chance. Before long, when I can’t feel the light anymore, I opened my eyes.

“Wow...”

As much as I can see, from one end of the horizon to the other, was an open field.

I glanced around restlessly.

I could see the rough earth that had sparse patches of short grass. When I looked at the sky, I found that it was a magnificent blue unobscured by clouds.

I was attacked by a pressurising feeling, as if I was being crushed.

I don’t see anyone in this vast wilderness. There was only me. It feels like there was only me in this world. My throat was dry, and my legs were shivering in fear.

Then, I suddenly noticed that the card in my hand had already disappeared.

And at that time...

《Please make your Base》

These words floated right in front of my face.

What is this? No, I think I understand it.

Some knowledge suddenly appeared in my mind. It was about [The ability to make town].

For now, I think this word in front of me was created by my mind. According to the knowledge I just received, it’s called [Town Data]

【Town Mayor】Nobuhide Fujiwara

【Funds】100 billion yen

【Setting Era】Edo

【Town】None

When I was wondering what is this floating display was about, a square screen appeared right in front of me.

It showed my [Town Data], which is like a status of my ability.

Well, looking from the top, the name of the [Town Mayor], Nobuhide Fujiwara, was written in ancient script. Because of this, I was being given nicknames like [Daimyo] or [Samurai]. The worst one so far was [Baka-dono].

Next, [Funds] were 100 billion yen. All of these were in the form data and would not be in my hands. I will need to manage this 100 billion yen well to build a town.

As for [Town], there is none since I haven’t built one yet.

About this [Setting Era], [Edo] was a commodity from the [Ability to Make a Town] that could be purchased. This means that as long as I pay the appropriate amount of money, I can buy a town with the setting of the Edo era.

Then, what would happen if I want to buy modern stuff? Of course, modern stuff will not be available in the Edo era. In order to fill the gap of the era, I would need to pay one hundred fold of the original price.

For example, if I wanted to buy a ten yen candy bar, I would need to pay a thousand yen for it.

Then, how should I change the [Setting era] to [Modern Era]?

That was already explained in the card description, I would need to invest 1 trillion yen. By the way even though I said invest, it was merely the funds in the

data that would disappear.

I wonder if 1 trillion yen is considered high or low? However, it is still an enormous sum for a single person.

Now then, I decided to follow the instructions and make a base first.

I touched the [Merchandise Catalog] below [Town Data].

Products

Buildings

Furniture

Food

Cookware

Clothing

Vehicles

Miscellaneous Goods

Entertainment

Military Affairs

From this, I selected [Buildings].

Buildings

Edo Building

Heisei Building

Future Building

For the time being, I chose the [Edo Building].

Castle

Samurai’s House

Commoner’s House

Others

I chose [Castle].

[Edo Castle] 100 billion yen.

Too expensive.

Beside it was [Osaka Castle] costing 80 billion yen, and others also with stupid

high prices forming a line.

I pressed back, and chose [Samurai’s House].

There were sample images of mansions displayed in a row.

At the top was one mansion with the size of one thousand tsubo with the price 100 million yen. At the bottom was a mansion with the size of a dozen of tsubo with the price several million yen.

[TL: 1 tsubo = 3.3 Meter or 35.6 feet]

I can acutely feel the big difference in hierarchy in the samurai society. Overall, I think it was slightly too cheap. Is it because I got the price of the land for free?

I pressed back again and chose [Commoner’s House] this time.

It was filled with houses with thatched roofs that can found in rural areas. There were also houses like a merchant’s house with a tiled roof, and looked like a storehouse. There was also a tenant house that was like an Edo-styled apartment complex filled with numerous rooms.

The sample of variety images were forming a line.

The most expensive one exceeded 10 million yen, but it was an affordable price.

Next, I pressed back again and choose [Others] this time.

There were facilities like bathhouses, inns, and other buildings such as shrines

and temples lined up. The prices varied too. For example, the big shinto shrine was in the hundred million yen scale.

Well then, now that I've seen all of the buildings in the Edo era; although I was interested in it, my real intention was to a build modern era house as my dwelling.

Therefore, I opened the [Heisei Era] building.

House

Facility

I pressed [House] to proceed to the next page.

Single Family House

Residential Building

I chose [Single Family House] and proceeded to the next page.

Wooden Structure.

Steel Frame Structure

Steel Reinforced Concrete Structure.

Prefab House

Of course, I chose [Steel Reinforced Concrete Structure].

It was a fireproof structure, and excelled in earthquake resistance. The demerit was that it cost a lot of money.

From countless houses, I chose a grey colored house with a triangle roof.

Furthermore, I made a specification for the electricity to be running, and made a self-sufficient energy type house.

A complete self-energy type house was, simply put, one that uses a solar cell to generate necessary energy to generate electricity and gas from outside. In this world, it looked like a dreamlike house.

The solar panel's generation capacity is 10 kWh (KiloWatt/hour), and the battery’s capacity is 12kWh. It's rated power value is an excellent 3 kW.

That amount is quite considerable.

The solar panels occupied fifteen tsubo of the roof. And above all, it was very expensive. In addition to the price for the house, the [Solar Panel] cost 400 million yen (listing price 4 million yen), and the [Storage Battery] cost 200 million yen (listing price 2 million yen).

Well, I would still buy it though.

[The completely self-sufficient two-storey house that’s a total of fifty tsubo wide] costs 4.6 billion yen (Listing price 46 million yen).

[Do you want to buy it?] [Yes/No]

I pushed [Yes].

Then, a 3D map of the surrounding area appeared before me. I moved my finger and chose the place to build my house.

The sounds zuzuzuzu and bam made me look at the area around me in surprise.

The grass and soil on the ground were being pushed away, and something with an earth-like colour swelled out slowly.

This would probably become a house..?

A to-be-finished house appeared right before me. For a while, I looked at it, dumbfounded.

「……」

Nevertheless, it is slow. It’s too slow.

According to the knowledge of the ability, it seems like the safety aspect was

being considered, so it could only surge up from the mud slowly.

It would likely take thirty minutes or more to form properly.

I looked at it absentmindedly, and to pass my boredom, I opened [Town Data].

From the [Merchandise Catalog], I bought a Pipe Chair under [Furniture] for 30 thousand yen (listing price 300 yen). Furthermore, I also bought a weekly manga magazine under [Entertainment] for 26 thousand yen (Listing price 260 yen) to kill time.

Chapter 005 - Town Planning ②

[Funds] 100 billion → 95,399,944,000 yen

Ten minutes later, the house had finally fully risen from the earth. The point where the mud colored structure turned into a house was the best, if I must say.

《Please select your home base》

These new words were floating in front of me.

Thus, I selected the [Map] command.

The map of the surrounding area appeared, and the map of the house that

was built just a while ago was flashing.

I touched it.

《Do you want to set it as your base?》[Yes/No]

Of course, I pressed [Yes].

《A Base has been selected. Please create a town next.》

Just like this, my stronghold was born in the other world.

I ignored the words [Please create a town next], and entered the house.

“OOH....” My voice of admiration leaked out unconsciously.

This was surely a house of the modern era. Even though it was in a different world, this room gave me an incredible sense of security.

But, it’s still not enough.

I turned the faucet. Naturally, water didn’t come out.

I summoned [Town Data], and chose [Home Base]. The drawing of a single house appeared. Then, I chose [Customize] and edited the house.

I added [Well], [Solar Pump], [500L Water Storage Tank], [Water Supply], and [Drainage System] to the new house. For these installations, some of the areas around the house (in 3-D) were shining to indicate the areas where it was

possible to do the installations.

First, I tried to establish the [Water Supply]. I created a [Well], and set up the [Solar Pump]. Next, I installed the [Water Pipe] to the [Well], connected it to the [Water Storage Tank], then connected it to house.

With this, I have completed the [Water Supply] system.

But, after completing all this work, I suddenly had a thought.

The water at this place... Is it soft water or hard water?

I have heard that if you drink hard water, you might get a stomachache. Not to mention, you can’t use it with japanese soap.

In fact, the present day tap water contains chlorine. Anyway, when I use this ability, I can purchase soft water for free, so it’s fine.

[Soft Water from the Mountains] 0 yen

Then, what did I build this [well] for? I might have been slightly careless... Well, it’s already too late.

I changed my plans and moved on to the next establishment. I have confirmed on the map that there is a river nearby, so I linked the restroom to the river using a [Drainage Pipe].

Luckily, there was a river nearby. If the river was far, I would need to move around to find it because the map only shows my location and the surrounding areas. It would become a cumbersome thing to do.

Furthermore, I intend to use the [Drainage Pipe] to discharge used water from household use, and water from the toilet into the river. I don't think it is a good idea to pollute the water too much, but if I just use pure soap and not synthetic detergent, I think there should be no problems. ...I think.

Like this, the [Drainage System] was completed.

So far, I've used 131,600,000 yen. The most expensive one was the [Well] and the [Solar Pump], which cost 100 million yen a set (Listing Price 1 million yen).

Next, I bought furniture for this house. Air Conditioner, Refrigerator, Microwave, Electric Pot, Rice Cooker, TV, Computer, Cookware set, one set of Tableware, Desks, Chairs and a Bed. The total came to 23,400,000 yen (Listing Price 234,000 yen).

At last, it's finally finished.

There is a huge difference in terms of infrastructure between my house and the others of this age.

I breathed out deeply and took off my suit jacket before allowing myself to sink down onto the sofa. Even though I didn't do any particularly hard work, I felt a sense of accomplishment.

For now, the house was complete.

The money left was about around 95 billion yen. The lifetime earning of an average salaryman was around 250 million yen. With the era set at Edo, I have close to four hundred times of their lifetime earnings.

[TL: Ok here is confusing part either the author math is failing him or he just forget to put 2 '00' behind the 4 times. Cause the initial funds was 100 billion.]

With this ability, I can live without any inconvenience from now on.

However, there is something I am anxious about - the existence of foreign enemies.

God said that this world was similar to the Europeans' in the Middle Ages. What if beasts, thieves, and the Lord of this land tried to harm me?

Hmmm... Maybe it was a mistake to build this house so early. I should have done so only after I have collected information on the surrounding areas. I should reflect on this later.

I believe God said "You will be sent to the place where you can build your foundation.". So, is it right to build a house here after all?

At any rate, I need more information.

I stood up from the sofa with gusto and left the house.

I purchased Binoculars costing 350 thousand yen (Listing Price 3500 yen). However, even after looking around all 360 degrees, there was no sign of life in sight, nor even a building. Rather, it feels like this house was isolated in this vast land, which made me uneasy.

But, I have a way to get rid of this uneasiness.

When I entered the house, I summoned [Town Data] while sitting on the sofa. After choosing [Merchandise Catalogue], I chose [Stone wall, Front Gate, Back Gate, and Watch Tower], and chose [20 meters].

I set it to enclose an area of 100m around the house, and purchased it.

After a loud thud sounded, I saw walls rising out slowly from the earth when I

looked outside of the window.

It was a stone wall that looked exactly like what was shown in the picture. It was considerably thick. With this, I will not be attacked by foreign enemies easily.

Well, since it was a huge twenty meters wall, it should take around an hour to complete. So, I will take it easy until the stone walls are completely up.

I purchased Potato chips, Cola and a BD movie. I decided to work hard watching the movie.

[‘World of The Dead’ Blue-ray Disc] 450 thousand yen (Listing price 4,500 yen)], [Potato Chips] 8000 yen (Listing price 80 yen), and [500 ml of Cola] 10 thousand yen (Listing Price 100 yen).

Two hours later...

“That zombie thing was great after all.” I commented.

Their stiff bodies raise up as they increase their own numbers and plunge the world in fear. Because of such a simple plot, the viewers’ hearts don’t get stressed since they can predict the story easily. Besides, one won’t get bored easily because the settings are always slightly different, which makes it still enjoyable.

[TL: not 100% sure of last part.]

I approached the window and looked outside while critiquing the zombie movie.

The huge twenty meters tall stone wall had already fully risen from the earth. It was much bigger than this house.

“Even if the stone wall collapses, it will be alright because it is a considerable distance from the house. Although it cost a lot of money, it’s a majestic wall after all.” I muttered to myself in fascination.

A twenty meters tall stone wall encircling the house.. With this came an incredible sense of security.

But, the cost I paid wasn’t little.

The [Stone wall with front and back gate together with Watch Tower] for [20 Meters] cost 12 billion yen.

Even though I am worried, I think that the remaining amount of funds was still alright in my heart.

Anyway, the initial fund of 100 billion yen has decreased to 83.2 billion yen on the first day I came here.

But, if any problems happen after this, the funds will run out immediately.

Well, to get more funds, I need to have some local merchandise that can be sold. Using the command [Sale], I can then convert the product into cash data.

[TL: So basicly he need to possess the item that he got from this world and using the command [Sale] converting the item to Cash which was only a Data]

However, you can’t use [Sell] on other people’s items. But, it will become my possession when a buy and sell contract is established.

It is the rule of this ability.

Also, with my ability of [The ability to make a town], I can effectively collect tax from people when they move into the town that's established.

For that reason, I need to have citizens first. But, I also need to establish the town.

Should I gather people first and then build a town? The answer is no.

Frankly speaking, [The Ability to make town] is an abnormal power.

For example, it is like a chicken that can produce a golden egg.

If my ability was exposed to the public, influential people will set their sights on me.

Besides, I have already built my house here. It will not be possible for me to make a town in another place anymore.

Thus, I summoned the [Town Data] again to properly make a town.

Chapter 006 - Town Planning ③

I chose [Community Building] from the bottom of the [Town data] command. The [Community Building] command was the command to simplify the troublesome work of creating buildings one by one.

When the 3D map of the area surrounding the stronghold appeared before my eyes, it was accompanied by a notification.

《Starting the simulation. Please choose the range.》

In accordance to the navigation, I selected a range of five hundred square meters past the stronghold stonewalls with my finger. Two options appeared before me.

Building

Facilities

The [Building] command was properly divided into several blocks that were suitable to build a house. Furthermore, with [Facilities], I could build a sewer and extend it near the river.

Oops, I shouldn’t forget about restrooms.

I heard that the town of Edo at that time was the cleanest city even if you compared it to the whole world.

The reason was because restrooms were installed in various places.

I operated the screen with my finger, and installed restrooms in various places in the town.

Besides making wells and bathrooms, I also built a main road at the center of the town, and built inns and stores around it.

Finally, I widened the range of the town a little bit, and built a stone wall that was five meters tall to enclose the town.

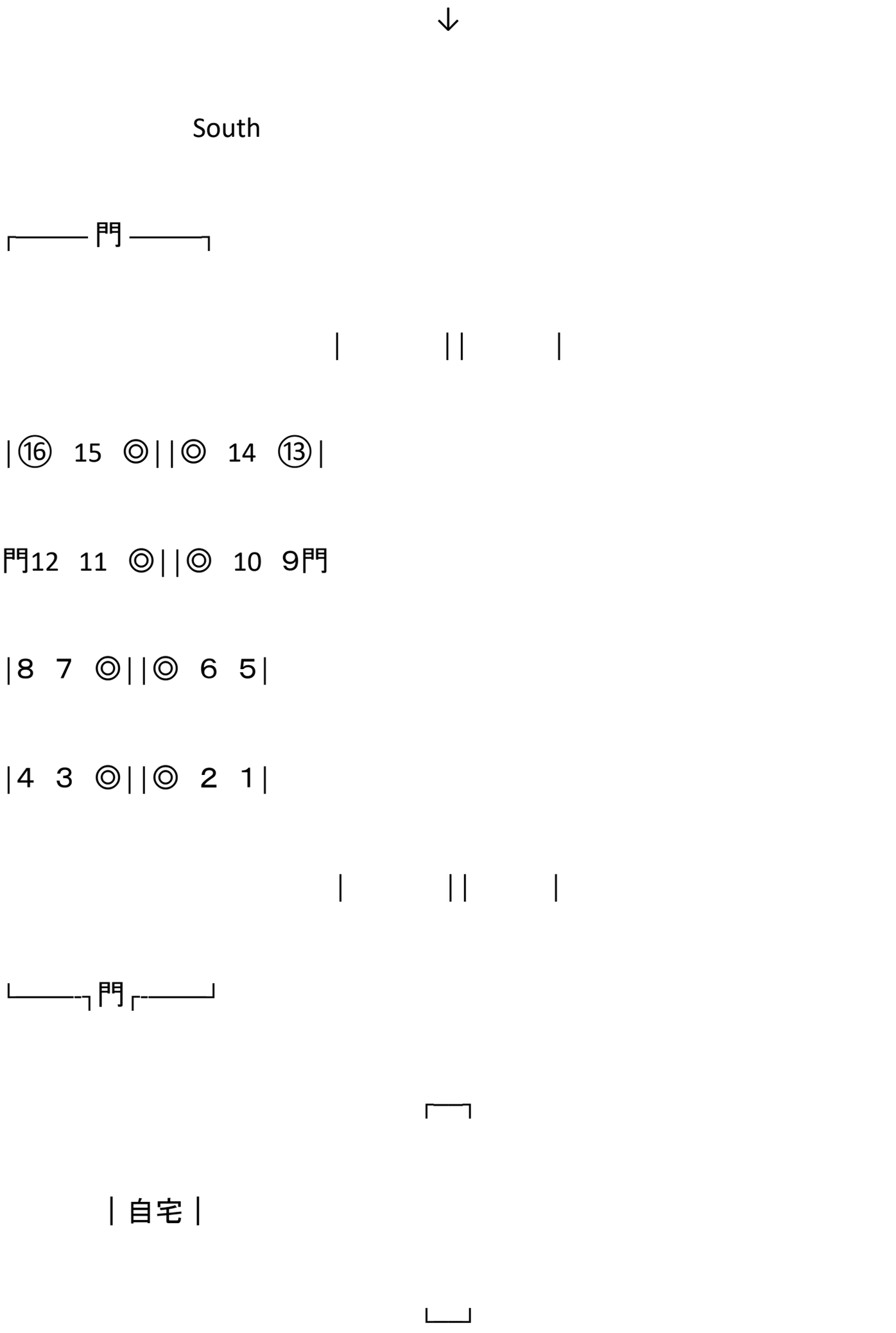
“Like this...” I mumbled.

After much trial and error, I was finally able to complete the town’s blueprint.

North

↑

West← →East


↓
South
門
|⑯ 15 ◎||◎ 14 ⑬|
門12 11 ◎||◎ 10 9門
|8 7 ◎||◎ 6 5|
|4 3 ◎||◎ 2 1|
門
自宅

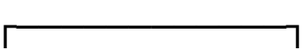
◎……a Store or Inn.

⑬⑯……Vacant lot.

自宅 : Home

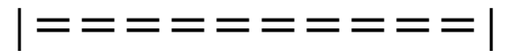
The town, with the exception of the main street, was split into sixteen districts. The thirteenth and sixteenth districts were reserved for potential future use, so I just left them as vacant lots.

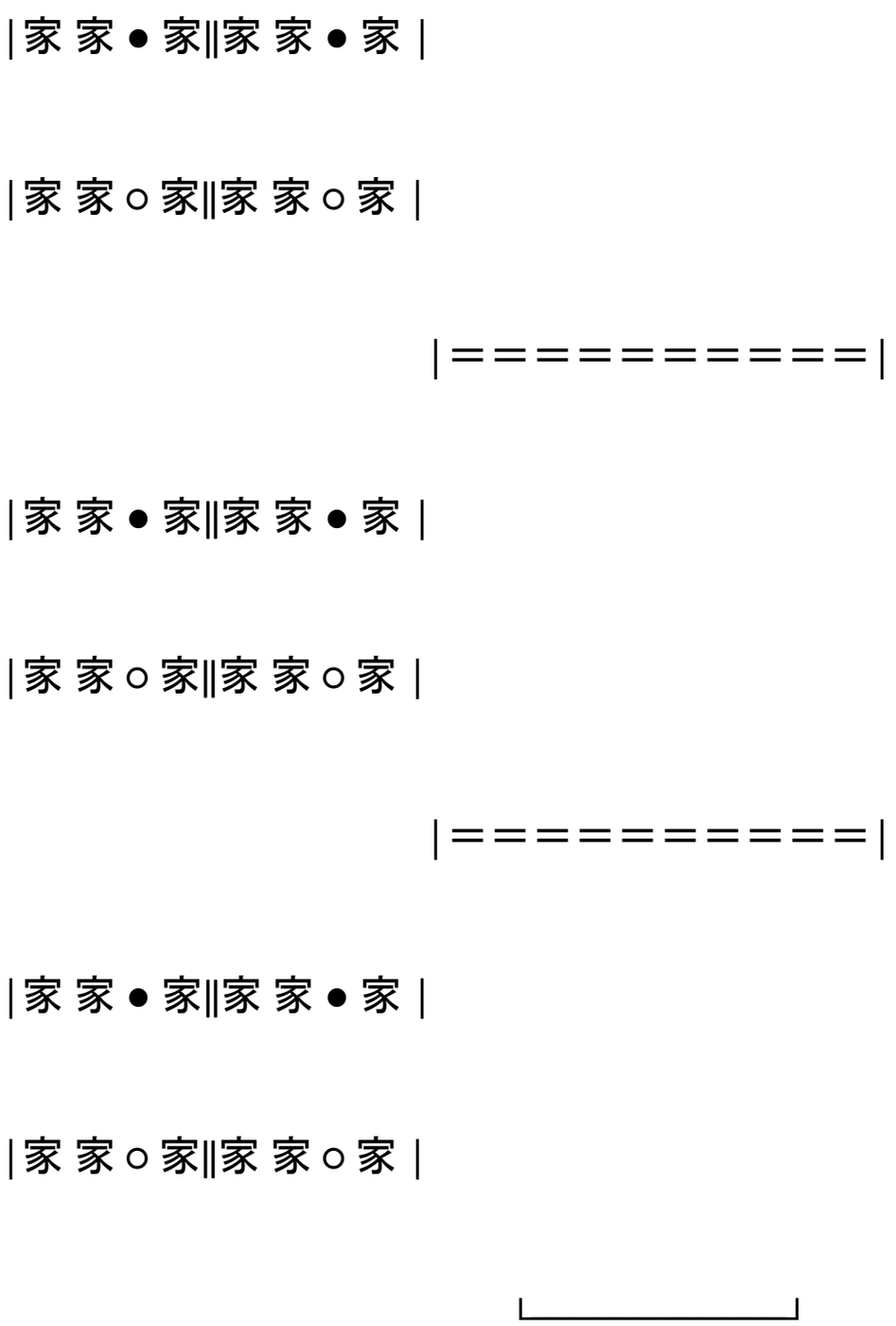
Each district has the size of one hundred square meters. Furthermore, the districts were divided into eight parts, and hold a total of forty-seven units of houses.



| 大家 ● 家‖家 家 ● 家 |

|家 家 ○ 家‖家 家 ○ 家 |





大家……This is the place where there representative of the district lives.

＝‖…… Road

○…… Well, Bathroom

●..... Toilet

One district was divided into eight divisions, in which a well, a bathroom and a toilet is provided for every six houses.

The size of one single-storey house was sixteen tsubo (approximately fifty-three square meters) on a piece of land that's about one hundred square meters.

I didn't want to repeat the same mistake as the incident where Edo was damaged by the great fire because it was too crowded. That's why it's important to have a well-planned out town to prevent the spread of fire.

Furthermore, although it costs money, the structure of each house was built using roof tiles and earthen mud. I made it like a Japanese storehouse because it has a good reputation of being fireproof. Also, the roof tiles hardly require any maintenance, so you can trust its durability.

With this, the simulation ended. The total expense was 30,153,200,000 yen in

spite of it being a small town with six hundred and fifty-eight houses in it. Not to mention, the stone walls, and houses... Even the sewer cost a lot of money.

With the amount of funds I have on hand, it would be impossible to make a town much bigger than this. However, if the town was to be made any smaller, it would feel unsatisfactory.

After a little bit of thought, I decided to touch the [Complete] button at the corner of the screen.

[Do you want to buy this town?] [Yes/No]

I chose [Yes] with a trembling finger.

After that, I could hear a loud rumbling sound outside of the house.

I ended up buying it. It was a huge spending of 30 billion yen.

The remaining funds were around 50 billion yen. From the initial fund of 100 billion yen, only half of it was left now.

However, it is already too late to regret it.

I purchased a 38 thousand yen beef bowl(Listing Price 380 yen) and had a late lunch while waiting for the town to be completed.

Several hours later...

After eating my meal, I lied down on the sofa while reading a magazine leisurely, until I heard the rumbling from outside stop.

I immediately left the house to see the town.

“Ooo... So this is my town...” My voice full of admiration leaked out.

Various buildings were spread out from the outskirts of the castle. It looked slightly like a scene from the old days.

I gulped audibly as I continued looking.

This town right in front of my eyes was the town that I’ve built. Even though I am not a god, I feel like I have become something special.

Well then, let’s look around the town right away.

First was the private house.

Umu, it was white. It was styled after a storehouse and used a type of white stone as the main material, and was plastered with mortar as the finishing touch. Because of the white walls and tiled roofs, the house's atmosphere turned out to be more like the Meiji Era instead of the Edo Era.

However, I don't have any complaints.

When I entered the private house, there was the earthen room near the front door that could be called a kitchen with a stove installed there. From the front door, there's also an alcove at the back which contained two rooms where light can shine in from the window.

Next, I went to the public places.

First was the hand-pump well and washing area. Here is where the wastewater passes through the drainage system via a gutter. There was also a dug out ditch enclosed by a wooden border, and lidded with wood again on top of it.

This sewage system was installed throughout the town, and eventually gathers all the waste and sends it to the river outside of the town through the bottom of the gate.

The sewage ditch that came from the town was made to be wide so that it will not clog. Since it was made from stone, it won't break easily either. But, the sewer was only used for wastewater, and not human waste.

I mean, if human waste was discharged into a sealed room like the sewer, the town will stink and an epidemic might occur.

The next one is the restroom.

It was a small hut with four stalls in it. The stalls were divided into two, two stalls with urinals and another two with lavatories.

The stalls with latrines are quite dark, so it will be dangerous if you lose your footing. Thus, when it’s nighttime, you’ll need to be especially careful.

However, because there was no sewer for the restrooms, you’ll need to scoop waste out using a ladle and put it into the bucket, and throw it far away. When residents come to this town, I intend for them to dig a hole far away from the river and bury the waste there.

In addition, the bathroom was a public one of around eight tatami mats in size. They even have goemon bathtubs inside.

When I go pass the residential area into the main street, stores and inns were

built on the right and left of the twenty meter wide main street.

Umu, this scenery is indeed beautiful.

Like this, when I looked around the whole town, I thought that the ordinary Edo town was amazing.

Anyway, I have built my home, and have also already built a town. With this, I don’t have anything to do anymore.

Later, what should I do for the residents who will settle down here..? I intend to make a future plan while reviewing the present status.

When I think about it carefully, I have already built such an outrageous town without much consideration.

No, I intend to reflect on it.

However, in this absurd situation, I need to retain some composure. To erase my loneliness and uneasiness, I used the skill [The Ability to make town].

That is why, from now on, I need to think more about it in the future, or so I thought while returning back to my home.

While sitting on the sofa, I opened the notebook on the desk and groaned as I held a mechanic pencil in one hand. On the notebook, I wrote [Purpose] of living in another world, [Long term Aim], and [Short term Aim].

First is [Purpose]: To live a peaceful life in another world.

Next would be [Long Term Aim]: To gather funds to make use of the ability to the maximum.

Finally, the [Short Term Aim]: To earn money from the tax from the townspeople.

To conclude [Short Term Aim] and putting it in action...

Umu. how do I get residents? In the first place, where is this place? Is it part of some country, or it is a land without people?

If this place is part of a country, how should I deal with the feudal lord? Do I submit to them, negotiate, or should I... Resist?

Well, there is a [Military Affairs] section in the [Merchandise Catalog]. In the Edo era, matchlock guns already exist. If I have money, I can even buy a tank.

『Awoken from sleep by Jokisen Tea, with only four cups of it, one can't sleep even at night.』

Jokisen can mean steam-powered ship, while four cups can mean four ships. This was from a piece of Japanese Classic Poetry which described the fear of the shogunate when the Americans forced Japan to open herself to the world with only four steamships.

It was the so-called Gunboat Diplomacy.

[TL:Yeah I have some difficult at this part so I just write what I read on the google. If you want more detail on it you can google it]

If this world is like the European Middle Ages, then I may be able to do the same thing as what the Japanese Classic Poetry described.

However, the existence of magic was disturbing. I myself don't like nor want

to act like a barbarian.

[TL: Basicly he didn’t want to act with violence.]

Hah, I can’t collect my thoughts...

If there is no one in this land, then residents aren’t needed. So, should I just live leisurely here?

But, what should I do if there are disasters like earthquakes, typhoons, thunder, volcanic eruptions, or tsunami? It’s not like Japan where your life will be guaranteed when there is disaster.

I can only rely on myself. As expected, I want residents if that time comes. It’s the power of united people.

If there’s a town nearby, maybe I can find an orphan or a slave as a candidate to be a resident? Or should I just negotiate with the feudal lord and let them transfer residents here?

Urghh, so complicated…

Hahh... Are there no suffering people who are in need of a place to live popping out of nowhere?

Nevertheless, I believe in what the god said; [I will sent you to the place where you can build your life from the ground]. So, even if I don’t do anything, it will just happen naturally.

No, I need to have a minimum foundation first at least. However, I think that I’ve already fulfilled the minimum foundation.

Hmmm....

While letting my mind run in circles, I began a staring contest with the notebook and the mechanical pencil in my hands for the whole day.

The conclusion I got was this - tomorrow, I will start to investigate the area around here.

____ Just like this, day turned into night.

When it was night, I entered my bed.

The first night in another world was too quiet. This silence made me feel like I was the only one in this world.

Even though I was wrapped inside my futon, I still feel cold, but it was not because of the temperature.

I didn’t turn off the electricity. Even though it was only a light, I wanted to indulge in modern civilization.

Whatever it is, I wasn’t able to sleep.

The watch on my arm indicated that it was already past 0:00 am.

However, I don’t know if this world has the same twenty-four hour system as earth, so it might not necessarily be true.

When I tried to close my eyes to sleep, I suddenly had a thought.

Where did everyone go?

Frankly speaking, I am considered blessed because I can go to bed while being surrounded by stuff from the modern civilization.

But, how about them?

Did they arrive at a human’s dwelling?

Did they have a proper meal?

Are they sleeping in a place with a roof?

____Will they feel... lonely?

Thinking about that made me feel so stupid and filled with self-depreciation.

Even when I was able to live in such a modern house, I was tormented by sentiment to the point of feeling my chest tighten.

It must be tough for them.

“Do your best.” I murmured while closing my eyes.

...But, because I couldn’t sleep as expected, I got up and stayed up late watching a comedy movie.

Chapter 007 - Arriving of Townspeople ①

With a loud bang, the rough earth shook and reverberated.

It was the morning after the first night in a different world.

I went to the back of my house and practiced my marksmanship with a 9mm handgun.

[9mm Handgun], 20 million yen (Listing price 200 thousand yen). This purchase was for self-protection while scouting the surrounding region. There were other handguns called New-Nanbu at half the price, but compared to the 9mm handgun with a nine bullet count, the New-Nanbu only has a bullet count of five. In addition, judging by its price and extent of durability, I've made the 9mm handgun my choice.

[TL: I need to have some gun expert to confirm it to me. While googling around I read that 9mm handgun can have magazine for more than 9 while

Nanbu was 7 to 8.]

When I shot the gun for the first time, I was surprised by its recoil, but on the second time, I've started to get the hang of it. It was like the time when one can't lift up a block of gold which weighs twice that of a block of iron on the first attempt. Judging by its size, I only spent a little power to lift it up. The recoil of the gun shows its worth, and experiencing it once with my own body is a good thing.

One bullet was 10 thousand yen (Listing price 100 yen). Whenever I think that 10 thousand yen will disappear each time I shoot, it nearly made me hesitate to shoot.

However, in a life or death situation, I can’t hesitate because of the cost.

Besides the gun, I also bought [Camouflage Combat Uniform (Sand Color)], [Half-Length Boots (Brown)], [Bulletproof Vest], [Helmet], [Goggle (Orange)], [Face Mask], and [Gloves], all of which I’ve already equipped.

This one set of equipment cost 18,558,000 yen (Listing price 185,580).

I also bought an automatic car [Type 73 Large Truck], which cost 1.2 billion yen (List Price 12 million).

Since there were no regular roads, a normal car was out of the question. For that reason, I chose a vehicle that was used by the JSDF.

Why I didn't just use a jeep, you ask? It's because of the size. When facing a large truck, common beasts from the surrounding areas will just run away.

By the way, I had intended to buy a tank, with the price of 12 billion yen (Listing Price 120 million yen). However, when I consider what the future may hold, I can't afford this price.

"Something like this." After I finished shooting, I flicked the safety lock and

put the gun back into the holster on my waist.

Later, I went to check the paper target that I've fixed on a board on a tree thirty metres away.

There were holes were punched all over the place. For now, it seems like I've managed to hit the target to some degree.

"Well, next."

I took out a new piece of paper from my pocket, and attached it onto the board on the tree with some scotch tape.

When I went back into the house, I picked up the object that was supported by a two-legged stand.

[Type 89 5.56 Assault Rifle], 35 million yen (List Price 350 thousand yen).

Type 89 assault rifle. It was also an automatic rifle that the JSDF uses. Even though I said it was a rifle, it wasn’t just small, it also took the shape of a real rifle.

[TL: this is just a pun joke, where the kanji for rifle 小銃 can also mean small arms]

In comparison to its size, its performance wasn't a point to be compared with. Its shooting range was 500 meters, ten times that of a 9mm handgun, and its magazine can load up to thirty bullets too.

____ I have read the summary of its manual up till here.

[Umm... First of all, a single shot....]

When I was 100 meters away from the target, I flick the safety lock and pulled the trigger of the rifle.

Before long, it turned noon, so I ended the test fire to eat my meal.

After that, I boarded the truck and left from the back gate.

Once the truck was outside the gate, I exited the truck to lock the gate from the inside. Afterwards, I left by the gate's [Side Door], and locked the [Side Door] from the outside.

Even though the gate used bolt locks, the side door still uses a key lock.

After locking my house this way, I started to investigate the surrounding areas with my truck.

First of all, I confirmed my position with a [Compass]. Even if it’s too late to be checking it now, the sun of this world also seemed to rise from the east and set in the west.

To the east of the town is a large river that runs from the north downwards to the south. It was the river used for the disposal of waste water from the sewer. If people were to live around here, then it would be somewhere near a river.

I stepped on the accelerator and moved on in the southeastern direction. Afterwards, while raising the dust along the river, I advanced the truck southwards. However, no matter how much I advanced, the same scenery continued on.

Since I first started driving, three hours had already passed. There was nothing but a dried up earth-desert spreading out as far as I could see. It was a scene that I could only see on TV. Not even a Shepherd's Purse grew here. It was exactly like a land of death.

I become somewhat scared and returned back home.

The next day, I travelled to the north, and the following day, I explored the west. However, after driving for three hours in both directions, I can't even find any shadows of humans, and the wilderness continues.

Considering that there is a river in the east, I didn't explore beyond that.

Thus, the investigation of the surrounding regions was finished for the most part. What I can conclude so far was that there were no people living around my home base, while the eastern side remained a mystery.

Therefore, I decided to stop the search and stayed inside the house quietly for now. It was the 'good things come to those who wait' strategy.

I passed my days leisurely in this different world. As the temperature becomes warm, wind blows from the southwest, and sand danced around. If one says that it was a western wind, it could very well be a seasonal wind.

As the continent becomes warmer, warm air currents rise. It was a natural phenomenon related to the wind blowing from cold water spots. In other words, at the further reaches of the southwestern area, there is an ocean, or a large lake.

Nevertheless, the town was full of sand because of this wind. It might have been a rash decision to make a town without residents.

___with that, one month has passed since I've arrived at this different world.

Here is a piece of good news. There is a resident besides me in this town at last.

Her name is Catherine. She has round eyes with long eyelashes. She has two large swelling peaks, and she has a distinctive voice___.

“OUHHHHHHHHH”

The origin of this cry… That’s right. Catherine isn’t human, she’s a camel.

[TL:..... FCK!]

[ED: Rofl. Expected.]

I met her when I was about to drive out from the gate and head to the south. In my tormenting loneliness, I wanted to attract her interest by any means. While luring her using some food, I was able to trap her inside the stone wall.

[TL: Oh god please don’t make it beastial I beseech YOU!]

[ED: Probably won’t, unless she has a human form. ...I hope.]

I will tell you a little bit more about Catherine. She’s a lazy fellow who usually just folds her legs and sits around doing nothing. Sometimes, when I thought she was finally standing up to take a walk, it turned out that she was just taking her meal. She just starts munching on the grass on the ground. The grass around my home has already disappeared. Everyday, I ended up having to cut grass from town and feed it to her. She’s lazy and gluttonous.

Therefore, in order to make Catherine exercise more, I put a saddle on her back, and forced her to walk around town. The saddle was made by stacking blankets, a handmade item.

I was thinking of feeding her a good meal, but I was worried that she would develop a cavity. Thus, at the very least, even if it's just water, I poured some of Japan's soft water into her bucket. I also cleaned up her droppings.

How should I say it... Surprisingly, it’s possible to [Sell] her feces.

There was a famous story from the Edo-period where a farmer bought human feces as fertilizer. In addition, they also collected horse dung along the way, and there was also a job called horse dung picking.

By the way, Catherine’s feces were about 100 yen a pile.

[TL: WTF WITH THIS AUTHOR AND HIS INTEREST WITH DUNG!]

[ED: He’s just into scat.]

Catherine was also attached to me now. She was rubbing her long neck against me when I complained about the weather ‘It was hot, recently’ while lying down. She was really a spoiled child.

Like this, she became the support for my heart.

Chapter 008 - Arriving of Townspeople ②

Thus, a few days passed.

I woke up and raised my upper body from the bed.

Light shone into the room from the other side of the curtains. When I looked at the clock near my bed, it was just a little bit before noon.

Even though it was late in the morning, I didn’t particularly mind. I wouldn’t have calls coming in from my office after all. In this different world, every day was like a Sunday. I can sleep anytime I want, and get up whenever I want. This is the lifestyle in this different world.

But, that day, I didn’t wake up by myself. I was awakened by noise from outside.

“What is it?” I muttered while getting down from my bed and opening the curtains.

I could hear someone knocking on the gate.

“How is it? Can you climb it?”

“It’s useless! I can’t reach it!”

There were not only knocking sounds on the gate, but also the sound of people talking.

In other words, there were intruders.

After climbing over the town’s stone walls, it seems like they were trying to climb over my home’s stone walls too.

Too bad. Unlike the town’s stone walls that were only five meters tall, my home’s stone walls were twenty meters tall.

The structure of the stone walls were made so that as you climb further up, the stone becomes steeper (Mushakaeshi). In other words, as the stone wall rises higher, the length of the vertical step also becomes much longer, making it much more difficult to climb.

Moreover, there was also a turret built on top of the wall. Even if you were able to climb the stone walls using the gap between it, you would not be able to climb the wall without a foothold.

However, it would be troublesome if they were to use a tool.

Hurriedly, I wore my equipment for self-defense quickly, and left my house with the handgun and rifle in hand.

In the garden, Catherine didn't make any noise and plopped herself down as usual. Looking at that, my heart calmed down somewhat, because during these times of emergencies, what one needs to do is to think rationally.

And so, I went up to stand beside the turret next to the front gate.

With binoculars in hand, I looked out quietly from the turret's window.

I could see one hundred, no, a group consisting of two hundred people. However, they don't look normal at all.

Looking through the lens of my binoculars, although they looked like a human being at first glance, they seemed too hairy to be one. Amongst them, there was even a person who had a face completely different from a human's. They seemed to be a tribe of wolves walking on two legs who were wearing their own unique ethnic patterned folk clothing.

What the hell.

I wonder if this is... A beastman tribe?

"There is someone there!"

"Not good!" As one of them pointed a finger in my direction, I hurriedly concealed myself.

However, why I should hide myself?

This is Catherine’s and my kingdom, so there was no reason why I should restrain myself.

So, I came out once again and shouted to them.

“What business do you guys have here?!”

The crowd under me started to make noise. Before long, one of them stood up to raise their voice.

“I am the tribal chief of this clan! We have travelled from the wasteland in the north as there is no food there! I wonder if you could spare us some!”

I see, so they are starving.

When I looked from the binoculars again, all of them looked bony. It seemed like they had trouble finding things to eat. There were children amongst them too.

It isn't that I'm reluctant to help them. But, I can't say for sure that they weren't bandits either.

It would be troublesome if they point their weapons at me the moment I open the gate.

"Alright, but, I'm not trusting you yet! So, listen up! Get a little farther from the gate! I will deliver food to the outer regions of the gate! Don't move before I give you permission! Do you understand!?" I yelled.

They started to murmur again, and with a clap, their tribal chief opened his

mouth again.

“U-Understood!”

As the tribal chief answered, they started to leave the gate.

But, wait a minute.

“Tribal Chief! How many members do you have there?” I questioned.

I have to know the number of people in order to prepare sufficient amounts of food.

“There are about one hundred and eighty people!” The tribal chief stopped and answered.

About? What do you mean by about? Don’t you know the numbers of your own people?

“Alright! You can go!” I sighed.

After sending them off, I descended from the turret and moved to the front gate.

[Rice tub] [X20] 3000 yen x 20 = 60,000 yen.

[Cooked rice (10 units)] [X20] 3200 yen = 64,000 yen.

First, I bought a tub to contain the cooked rice before purchasing the steamed, hot rice. Including some extras, I have prepared enough for two hundred people.

The Edo era rice was 3,200 yen for ten units. In other words, a unit equals to 320 yen (1 unit is approximately 150 grams). If this was uncooked rice, then a unit would be 160 yen.

The cheap rice that I bought from modern japan was 2,500 yen/10 kg. In other words it's 37.5 yen/unit.

When compared to modern Japan, I could see that the Edo period's price was definitely higher.

Well, isn't it obvious? By using machines, it would be much easier grow and harvest rice in the modern age. Furthermore, there were differences such as using pesticides and fertilizer too. As for the productivity, you don't even need to compare it with the Edo era.

Aside from that, it could also be that the cost of living in the Edo era was quite high. At that time, before foreign currencies took their influence, the Japanese were self-reliant on gold mines.

Now then, since it would be dull with only rice, I decided to provide side dishes as well.

[Bucket] [x10] 3000 yen x 10 = 30,000 yen.

[10 kilograms of miso] [x2] 8,400 yen x 2 = 16,800 yen

[50 grilled sardine with salt] [x8] 5,000 yen x 8 = 40,000 yen.

I placed the miso and the sardines into the buckets.

Even though there were a lot of other fishes, I chose sardines as they were the cheapest. It seemed like sardines were also the most common fish that commoners used to consume in the Edo era.

“Well, I think this is enough.” I muttered to myself.

If I allowed them to eat extravagant food, it would not be good for their future.

Next, I prepared the containers for their food, spoons, as well as water for them.

[Bucket] [x6] 3000 yen x 6 =18,000 yen.

[Mountain spring water] 0 yen.

[Wooden Bowl] [x400] 500 yen x 400 = 200,000 yen.

[Wooden Spoon] [x200] 300 yen x 200 = 60,000 yen.

Those four hundred wooden bowls included the ones used for drinking. Since I couldn’t leave the wooden spoons on the ground, I placed them into the empty buckets.

Alright. Now, all I need to do is to carry them out. But first, I need to make sure that they kept their words.

I climbed up the turret once again and confirmed the position of the beastmen.

As promised, they were waiting at a distance.

I went back to the front gate again and exited from the gate's side door. Then, I readied my rifle while carrying the food out one by one.

"Oh, it's heavy..." I grunted.

It proved to be quite hard labour. Above all, the amount is a lot. At the edge of my field of vision, I saw movements from the beastmen.

Two people were running towards me.

I clicked my tongue and took out the handgun from my waist.

I flicked off the safety switch, and shot a bullet towards the sky.

Bang!

It produced an ear splitting sound, but I am already used to it. However, the startled pair stopped on their feet, shocked.

“I have already said it before! Until I give my permission, don’t come here!

This is a warning!”

Once again, the sound of gunshots reverberated in the sky.

The two beastmen trembled once again in distress, and quickly returned to the pack. I could hear someone yelling. Did those two act on their own?

Afterwards, I finished carrying the food out somewhat, and entered back into the inner side of the stone wall before going up to the turret again.

“You may eat!” I shouted loudly to the group from the window.

Like ants attracted to honey, the beastmen gathered around the food. As everyone ran vigorously, I came to worry about the dust. It would be great if they found the food appetizing, or else it would have been a waste of effort.

“Fo-It is food! It really is food!”

Have they not had any proper food to eat until now? Everyone’s face brightened up.

The first person to arrive picked the sardine up and bit into it.

“Delicious!” The clamor of joy echoed to the sky.

Starting with him, the rest started to reach for the food.

Oi, oi! Why are you guys using your hands instead of the bowls? As I retorted in my mind, they began to notice the wooden bowls only when their tribe chief told them.

In this way, they were able to keep order somehow. Like this, there would no case where someone wasn’t able to eat.

After the food was distributed to all the members, they started to eat.

Smiles were plastered onto everyone’s faces. It was a scenery of people buzzing in happiness.

Before long, the tribal chief looked up and lowered his head. I raised my hand in reply and continued to observe them eating happily.

After a while, the beastmen finally finished their meal. A lot of people were holding their stomachs while sitting down. Everyone looked satisfied.

No, it seems like there were a few as gluttonous as Catherine, even to the point where they shoved their heads inside the buckets to empty them out.

The tribal chief then turned his head to me and shouted.

“Excuse me! Thank you for the meal!”

“Don’t worry about it!” I also raised my voice.

“Er... It’s a bit hard to say this, but...!” The chief hesitated.

Yes, I could relate to it, the sense of helplessness to the point of having to shout out discreet matters.

“I know what you want to say! You want support for food right!?”

“Ye-Yes!” The chief replied.

Of course you do. After all, there would be no meaning if you could only eat for a day, because they also have to continue living tomorrow.

This is a chance for me.

“There is one condition! If you accept my condition, I will provide you food for a month!” I told him.

“What is the condition?!” The chief asked.

“I have something to ask you! Chief, I want to borrow you for a while!” I stated.

“You want to borrow me!?” The chief exclaimed.

“Exactly as what I’ve said! I will permit only you to enter my residence! Everyone else should move a distance away just like before!” I shouted.

The beastmen started to make a big ruckus. The pack couldn’t accept it. Some of them even yelled things about being deceived. Meanwhile, a few endured in silence. Those people seemed to agree to my proposition. However, they could not possibly publicly declare that they were willing to sell off their chief, thus, they could only remain silent.

However, when I looked at the tribal chief’s face, I could see that what the others have said did not matter to him.

“I understand! Thank you in advance for the food!” The chief bowed.

“I will certainly keep my promise!” I answered.

Chapter 009 - Arriving of Townspeople ③

When I confirmed that all the beastmen, except for their chief, have already retreated a distance from the turret, I brought along two pipe chairs with my left hand, and opened the side door.

There’s no chance to be careless.

Even though I’ve already placed the rifle inside the gate, I made sure that I could pull my handgun from my waist at any moment.

The man standing before the side door was the man who called himself the tribal chief. Amongst that group, this man bears a face with the least facial hair, making him look the most human compared to the rest.

His height did not differ much from mine, probably around the middle of 170 to 180 cm range. He looked like he was in his fifties. I thought that he was too young to be a tribal chief, but that might just be my bias.

On the top of his head was his long unkempt hair, and something that looked like three pieces of ears united together.

Despite their near-human appearance, such characteristics prove that they are from a different race. Furthermore, the backside of their arms to the back side of their hands were covered with hair.

“Um, this time ——” The chief began.

“Could you wait a moment?” I interrupted and opened the foldable pipe chairs, placing them face to face.

“Y-Yes.” The chief stuttered.

The chief stood and eyed the foldable metal chairs cautiously.

“Please, sit down.” I invited.

“E-Excuse me then.” He replied shakily.

I wondered if he’s nervous since he couldn’t calm down.

[ED: No shit. It’s not like you didn’t shoot out something metallic with a loud noise.]

Still, the chief’s smell was terrible. Even though the face mask I wore covered my nose, the intense smell managed to penetrate through it. It was made very clear to me that they haven’t bathed in a long time.

“I’m Fujiwara.” I introduced myself.

“I’m Jiharu, the Tribal Chief. Umm, once again, I thank you very much for your generous aid.” Having said so, Jiharu lowered his head.

I could sense his sincerity. But at the same time, I could sense his unease in bowing while being in a seated position.

It wasn’t a refined performance of courtesy. When I considered the level of culture in this world, their race might have been at the very bottom.

“With that said, let’s talk...” I said. “It’d be sufficient if you could answer my questions one by one. Again, these questions might be pretty obvious, but please, answer without minding it.” I stated.

Jiharu chief sighed, perplexed.

Now then, what should I ask..?

It would not be necessary to mention the matter concerning their invasion into the town. If one doesn't have food, and saw that there's no one inside the town, of course they would enter it.

There is a saying, as long as one has food and clothes, they will know manners. In other words, if they don't have enough food and clothes, they wouldn't know courtesy.

"First, tell me the name of this country." I requested.

"Country..?" The tribal chief had a puzzled expression.

“Yes, a country. There must be a remarkable person governing this land, right?” I asked.

“No, I have not heard of anyone like that.” The chief denied.

Hmm, as expected... This land is uninhabited after all. To be frank, I feel happy.

“Then, let’s change the question. Is there a country in this continent?” I questioned.

“Yes, there is, but...” The chief hesitated.

“Please tell me the name of that country.” I requested.

“I’m sorry. I only know about the Sandra Kingdom that’s to the north of this place.” He replied apologetically.

“By the way you speak, you mean that there are other countries in this continent, and that the Sandra Kingdom is one of them, right?” I tried to confirm his statement.

“Yes, that is right.” He nodded.

“Even though there are a lot of countries out there, in this area, there’s no country yet?” I asked.

“Y-Yes.” The chief nodded.

“Hmm...” I sighed.

Is this the only uninhabited place, or is this corner of the world the only place that has not been explored?

“Is there any reason for the Sandra Kingdom to the north to not invade this piece of land?” I asked.

At first glance, this place seems like a wasteland. However, though this area seemed to be an area with extremely dry climate, this land is fertile, and as long as there is access to water, this place is suitable for farming. Because there is a huge river running down from the north to the south, there isn’t any difficulty in irrigating the land.

In other words, this place is a valuable piece of land.

“From the story I’ve heard about from the previous chief, this is a cursed land.” The chief answered.

Cursed Land. What disturbing words. Considering that magic exists in this world, it wouldn’t be so strange if there’s a curse.

“...This land is a cursed land, huh?” I muttered.

“Yes, because of the frequent shaking of the ground. The Sandra Kingdom has tried to cultivate this land too, but every time they try to, the ground shakes, so it seems like they have given up on building dwellings in this area.” The chief explained.

Ground shaking... Is it an earthquake? Certainly, for those people who weren’t used to earthquakes, it is something fearful.

Buildings of nations with earthquakes and buildings of those without earthquakes...

As an example, the difference of having a fortress within the city is made clear as day. While piling up stone to form a mountain shape is the japanese style, the western way stacks up the stone to form a vertical wall.

[TL: what it means here is that the castle wall of japanese wall has width base and it get steeper as it goes up making it looks like a mountain, while the westerner wall was straight.]

In other words, people feared this land because of the earthquakes. It's a story which I can agree with.

"I see." I mumbled.

If this place has frequent earthquakes, it would mean that the location of the tectonic plates must be similar to Japan's.

“By the way, does this wasteland continue all the way to the Sandra Kingdom?” I asked.

“No, it becomes a grassland on the way. Beyond the grassland is the Sandra Kingdom. There are a lot of forests there as it rains a lot.” The chief answered.

“Do you know how far this place is from the Sandra Kingdom?” I questioned.

“I’m sorry, but I don’t know how far it is. But, it took us nearly twenty days before we passed through the Sandra Kingdom and arrived here.” He replied.

The average walking speed of a normal human is supposedly around 4-6 km/hr. Seeing that they move as a group, their speed should be at the lowest of 4 km/hr. If he said that they walked for about ten hours a day, then the Sandra Kingdom should be around 800 km from here.

No, is it possible for them to walk for 10 hours a day? They were starved. They

would have to stop by someplace from time to time to gather food.

Procurement of food and cooking takes a good amount of time. If there were sick people amongst them, their marching speed would decrease as well.

Thus, it's unlikely that the Sandra Kingdom would be 800 km away. I think it should be around 400-600 km instead.

When I went to investigate, I only travelled around 200 km. No wonder I can't even find the shadow of people.

However, there is something that I couldn't understand.

"Then, why did you come to this cursed land?" I asked.

It was a natural question. Simply thinking about it, it was to go on a search for food supplies.

But, judging from the story up till now, there should be plenty of food available from the Sandra Kingdom's forests where rain was abundant. There was no reason for them to come all the way to this dry land.

"...Because we were being chased by humans. The Knight Order of the Sandra Kingdom invaded the land where we lived..." The chief answered bitterly.

"Sandra Kingdom is a human country?" I was surprised.

The chief was puzzled by this question. However, there was no doubt in his eyes. He seemed to be surprised at my lack of common knowledge.

"The Sandra Kingdom is surely a human country.There are probably no other

countries that aren’t ruled by humans out there.” He explained.

“I see.” I nodded.

Looks like humans were the ones that rule this continent.

Since they were chased by humans, they followed the river until they arrived here, seeking for a place to live in peace. However, because there was only desert, they must not have found a place where they can live yet.

“Then, why were you chased by humans?” I questioned.

“The humans... Wanted the land where we live.” The chief sighed.

“If possible, please tell me how you guys became like this.” I requested.

“I understand.” After saying so, the chief started to talk bit by bit

A long time ago, it was the wolfmen tribe which ruled the land that was called the Sandra Kingdom now. Then, humans came invading from the north. War flared, and the wolfmen were defeated. Their population fell sharply, and they were pushed to a corner. Now, they were even driven out from that land.

“The humans’ reproduction ability isn’t something that can be compared to us. That must be why they ran out of fertile land quickly. Because human beings saw us as people from humble origins, that could be why they drove us out without any reason.” The chief finished his story.

“I see.” I frowned.

It was something like the Indian war in America during the pioneering period.

At any rate, they must have a lot of grudges against human beings. Fortunately, I am using goggles and the face mask. For now, the tribe chief didn't seem to notice that I was a human.

"Then, do you know anything about magic?" I asked.

"I'm sorry, but I only know of natural phenomenons like fire and water." The chief shook his head.

"Is there anyone that can perform magic in your tribe?" I probed.

"Humans and elves can use magic, but we can't use it." He replied.

——Elves. As expected, they exist, an existence that was sought after in fantasy worlds.

“Do you understand the reason why you can’t use magic?” I was curious.

“Because we have bodies that are far superior to Humans and Elves, so we don’t need the existence of magic.” The chief answered proudly.

Was it lost in their process of evolution?

They might have been the one oppressing human beings in the past. That is why humans learned magic. Yes, it might have been possible.

“Then, next——” I continued my questioning.

I asked about various things like human life, weapons, and the power with regards to human life. Like what God said, there was not much of a difference between this world and that of the European middle ages.

A big town that was surrounded by a fortress... Those with political authority live inside the castle, and the rest live while farming and breeding livestock.

First of all, magic was so unexpectedly weak that the humans seemed to rely on weapons as their main choice.

Apparently, besides the wolf tribe, there were a lot of other races called beastmen out there. Then again, aside from the beastmen, there were humans and elves, but, other than that, he doesn’t know much.

As for animals, names from my original world was mentioned. During the selection of powers from the [Cards], it was written that there were a lot of creatures which could be found in a fantasy world. Although they exist, the

chief said that they were rare.

When I asked about dragons, he replied [Isn’t that a creature from fairy tales?] with serious face. What was that card then?

Also, I questioned about the Demon King and the Hero. Regarding the Demon King, it seems like there was a story about him living in a freezing region in the far northeast. As for the Hero, it was title given to people who are strong.

“——I think I understand.” I paused after hearing the story.

I think I’ve already heard what I want to know for the most part. In between, knowing that this land wasn’t part of a country was the most fruitful.

I’m slightly uneasy about the earthquakes, but at least my house will be fine. After all, it’s a building constructed with steel and foundations to top it off. It is

because it was built using my ability, so there should be no cutting of corners at all.

Also, the town's earthen storehouse will be alright too. In the first place, merchants of the Edo era used the storehouse to store valuables. That is why it was named [storehouse], and was reputed to be of a sturdy nature.

However, because it was constructed with old methods, it might not stand up much against big earthquakes.

——and, I moved to the last question.

"We have talked for a long time, and this will be the last question. I was the one who made this town. But, there is something missing. Do you know what that is?" I smiled.

The chief widened his eyes when he heard the question. If one looked around

the town, they should understand that there were no people here. That is why he should understand the intention of my question.

“I-It’s people...” The chief said with trembling lips.

His eyes were reflecting the color of expectation. It was visible even through the orange lens of my goggle.

“That is right. Even if I can make a town, I can’t make people. However, there are some right in front of me now.” I said vigorously.

My voice wasn’t loud. And with a murmuring tone, I remarked.

“Your pack is poor and distressed. If you live here and plow the land diligently, I will guarantee your life.”

“Yee.... Yeeee....sss!” The chief’s body shook, and his eyes became wetter and wetter.

He might be trembling due to the excitement.

[ED: No shit. What else can he be trembling from? How low is the MC’s EQ even?]

Inside the chief’s heart, it might feel like he finally found a light in the dark.

I gave him another suggestion to increase his trust in me.

“Of course, you can decline. I will still give you one month’s worth of food from the previous questioning if that is the case.”

The tribal chief eagerly plunged down from the chair and prostrated himself.

“Please! Please! Let’s us live in this town! PLEASE!”

“I have heard your wish.” I said as gently as I could.

[ED: Well, someone wants to imitate god now lol. Please don’t have a god-complex. I beg you.]

“Thank you very much! Thank you very much!” Filled with inexpressible feelings, the chief pressed his head to the ground again.”

“Well, please stand up.” I held out my hand.

The chief grasped my hand and stood up. Our linked hand became a handshake that connected our hearts.

Despite of my poor choice of words, it was nevertheless, a good meeting.

But, there is still one thing left.

“Chief, there is one secret which I must tell you.” I mustered up my courage.

“Oh, what is it?” The chief asked.

I couldn’t remain silent about this because it would leave a seed of distrust in the future.

When I broke our handshake, first of all, I took off my helmet, then my goggles, and finally my face mask.

“Aa....h!?” The chief was shocked.

It was natural.

After all, their misfortune was caused by humans.

However, I was a human as well.

“I am a human. However, I wasn’t born on this continent——” I began my own story.

Chapter 010 - Arriving of Townspeople ④

“Aaa....”

When the chief saw my face, his mouth and eyes were wide open, and his body was trembling. There was an expression of shock on his face, but it’s a good thing that there wasn’t even a shred of hatred.

“Even if I am a human, will you still become residents of this town?” I spoke as if I was the one requesting for them to stay.

The attitude that the humans treated them with was simply too violent. With the prior violent treatment, my courteous confrontation gave myself a fairly good impression in their eyes.

Then, the chief, who was tongue tied from surprise, opened his mouth slowly, and stared at me as if trying to peer into my mind. He clenched his fist, as if

making up his mind, and said.

“...We don’t have anywhere else to go. Also, you seem to be different from the humans I’ve met.”

Even upon knowing that I am a human, Chief Jiharu still decided to take my hand.

Upon hearing his answer, a broad smile naturally appeared on my face.

“Then, I will leave it to you to persuade the others.” I stated.

“Excuse me!” The chief suddenly exclaimed.

“What is it?” I asked.

“I want to keep the fact that Fujiwara-sama is a human a secret for a while. There are some people who have lost their families along the way here...” He answered uneasily.

It was a request from the chief. The reason was quite obvious. I could understand that.

If it was made known that I am a human being, it would be the same as a betrayal towards the wolf pack.

It should be fine to reveal it afterwards when we have already build up trust towards each other.

[ED: That’s not what you said the prev chapter lol. Okay can.]

After reminding the chief to not cause any anxiety for the others, I sent Chief Jiharu out, and returned back inside the gate.

Now then, while Chief Jiharu persuades his tribe, I will need to prepare a few things.

For now, I need to purchase cleaning tools and futons first. As for the cookware, I will give it to them tomorrow, along with the explanation on how to use them.

They have already gone on a long journey. Surely they would want to have an early rest.

I summoned [Town Data], and purchased bamboo brooms, dust cloths, and buckets. The total came to 15,000 yen. I purchased it for each house in the district.

[Cleaning Kit] [x 47] 15,000 yen x 47 = 705,000 yen.

The number of people in the wolf group are about one hundred and eighty. If, by any chance they couldn't fit into all forty-seven houses of the first district, I'll need to prepare some extras. Furthermore, I've prepared woven straw mats for them, and transported them with a truck.

[Straw Mat] [X600] 2000 yen x 600 = 1,200,000 yen.

These straw mats will become their futon. It's a little bit of a digression, but it's because the common futon used in the Edo era was of such a price.

[Cotton Futon] 3,000,000 yen.

The price of the Edo era's futon was so expensive that I couldn't believe my

eyes. No matter what, I will never buy this. The price of a modern futon is a hundred times much cheaper than this.

Then, what kind of futon did the common people use during the Edo era? What they used was a woven straw mat covered by a paper futon. On top of it, there's also something called [Yogi - cotton filled]. Even though its price was not comparable to the [Futon - cotton filled], the price is still high nevertheless.

It seems like it was because the price of cotton was sky high at that time.

While I was doing this, someone knocked on the gate.

"Fujiwara-sama! The talk has ended safely!" The chief's voice sounded.

Upon hearing the chief's words, I went out through a side door to find that the people of wolf tribe have already gathered there. Some of them looked tense, while others stared at me doubtfully. Another group looked uneasy,

while more looked like they were clinging to hope. There were even people that didn't seem to care about anything. Each member had different expressions.

I cleared my throat in front of everyone. In response to that, the wolf clan twitched and jumped.

"I am the person in charge of this town. As what you've heard from the chief, you will become residents of this town. As you are resident of this town, I will take responsibility for your food, clothing and shelter." I stated in a slightly louder and clearer voice so that all of them could hear me.

All of them started to stir.

"However! I want you guys to abide by these rules by all means!" When I raised my voice, all of them went silent.

"First, don't do evil deeds!

Second, work seriously!

Third, never go past this gate!

Fourth, if you have some business with me, pass it on to your Chief!

That is all!”

Again, the people of the wolf clan murmured.

I wonder if I’ve made any unreasonable demands. But, what I asked of them were common practices.

“Is there anyone who objects to this?” I asked.

Everybody fell silent again.

“Ah, there is one more. Try to obey my instructions as much as possible. If you think it’s impossible, then by all means, you can refuse it. Next, since I will be showing you where you will live, please wait a while.” I announced.

Then, I went back to my home through the side door, and entered the truck. As I sat down on the seat and closed the truck door with slam, a smile floated onto my face naturally.

I could imagine the dumbstruck faces of those people when they see this truck.

The first impression is crucial. Just being nice is useless. You need to show them the difference in status in order to give them a scare.

I inserted the key, switching on the engine, and departed. Like that, I drove to the back of the gate.

I alighted from the truck, took off the bolts, and opened the gate.

Just as I opened one side of the gate, the people of the wolf clan peeked inside curiously. They only saw half of the body of the large truck exposed by the gate. Then, the other side of the gate opened. Finally, surprise was shown on the faces of the people of the wolf clan.

Certainly, they would be surprised if there was such a big thing behind the gate. Moreover, it was making sounds while vibrating.

But, it’s not over yet. I boarded the truck again, showed my face through the windows, and shouted.

“Open the way for me, please! All members gather along the wall!”

The chief gave out the order to everyone, and all members moved to the left

or right.

I lifted my foot off the brake, and the large truck started to move slowly. Since they didn’t think that it could move, everyone became nervous.

“It... It moved!”

“It’s... It’s a monster!”

The tribe members exclaimed.

Aah, what a pleasant feeling. This is modern technology. Even though it doesn’t mean that I am great, but I am proud as a person who lived in the modern age.

No one dared to step in front of the truck.

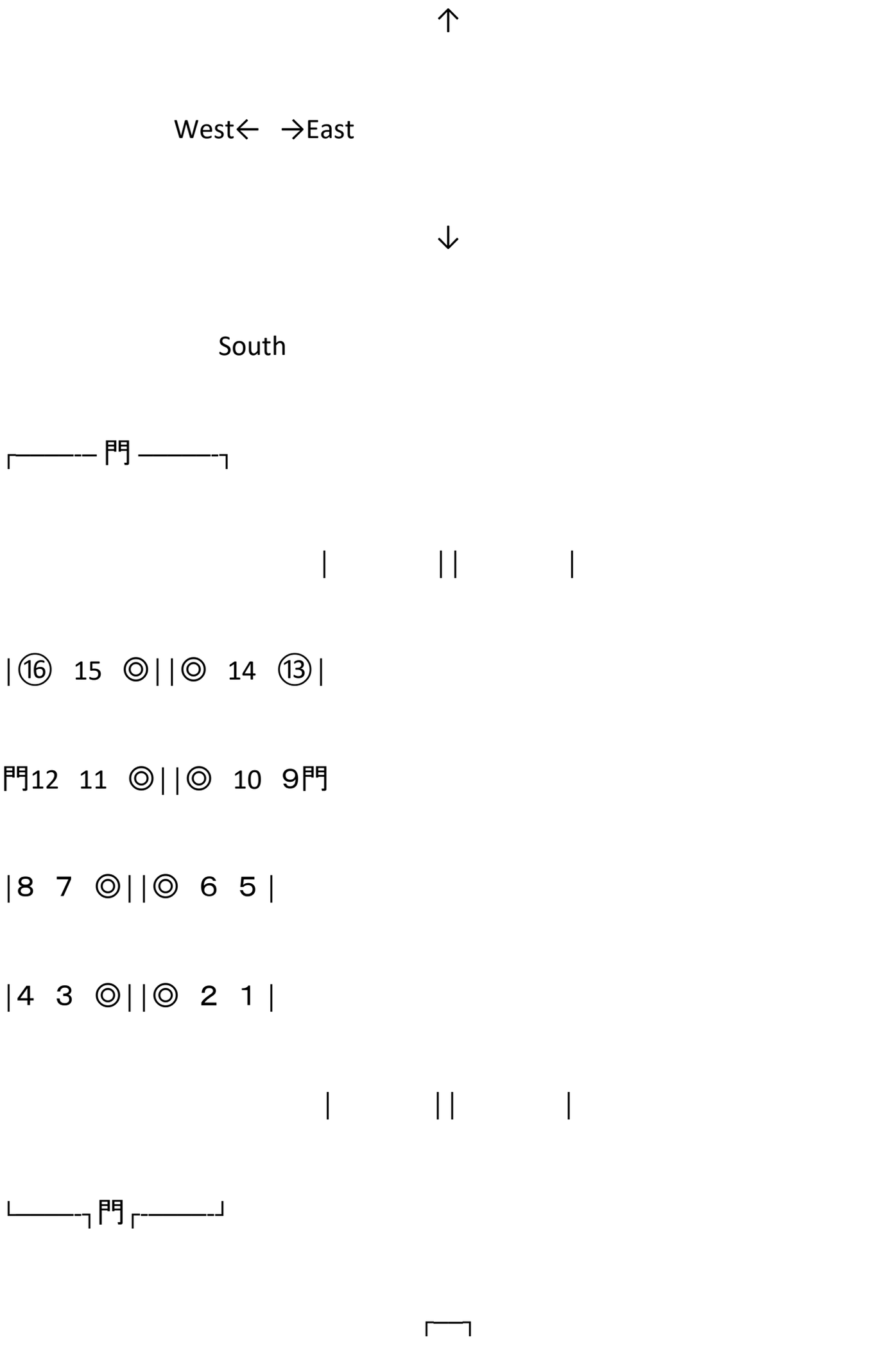
Halting the truck for a moment, I called out to the chief who was sitting on his backside from the surprise.

“Right now, I will lead the way. Please follow me, but do not stand right behind this ‘thing’.”

Then, I began driving the truck again.

The town was divided into sixteen districts. We moved to the middle of crossroad of first district, and I alighted from the truck.

North


↑
West← →East
↓
South
┌———-– 門 ———-┐
| || |
|⑯ 15 ◎||◎ 14 ⑬|
門12 11 ◎||◎ 10 9門
8 7 ◎		◎ 6 5
4 3 ◎		◎ 2 1
└———-┐門┌-———--┘
┌──┐

｜自宅｜

◎……A store or inn

⑬⑯……Vacant land

In my hands were a binder full of white paper, and a ballpoint pen. The people of the wolf clan were still cautious towards the truck, so they moved slowly behind it.

“Please come here quickly!” I declared.

Upon hearing my words, the chief, who was leading everyone, began hastening their speed. Before long, everyone had gathered, and I began my speech.

“Now, let’s decide the house where you will live. Let me talk about this district first. For every six houses, there will be a well, a bath, and a toilet attached.” I walked to stand in front of the well. “This is a well. There is a lid here, so please don’t try to take it off. By all means, try not to stand or sit on top of the lid, because you will die if the lid falls by mistake. Well then, I will be showing you how to draw water from this well.”

I heaved the pump up and down. Every time I lifted the handle up, the tap nozzle spouts water out.

“——And this is how the water is fetched out.” I ended my explanation.

“Ooo..!” Their voices were filled with admiration.

They must have never seen a hand pump before. Was it just because their civilization level is low, or because the civilization of this world is low too?

Whatever it is, their admiration makes me feel pleasant as the head of this town.

Next, we headed towards the restroom.

“This is the toilet. This is where you deal with excrements. Please do not dispose of your excrements anywhere else aside from here.” I instructed.

Everyone showed a startled face.

What is it? Did I said something strange? No, wait. Don’t tell me, they’ve already done it.

Several hours have already passed since they’ve arrived here. It would be stranger if they haven’t done it yet.

“...If you’ve already done that, I will overlook it this time.” I sighed.

Everyone’s faces clearly became relaxed.

The only saving grace was that in dry regions like this, the bacteria would have a hard time propagating.

I stood in front of a small wooden urinal, and said.

“This place is where men stand and urinate. Please aim well when you do your business.”

There was no special reaction in particular.

Next, I opened the stall door next to it.

“This is the place where men and women sit down and do their business. I think you can understand how to use it without me saying anything.” I stated.

Because I hesitated in mentioning women defecating, I only gave minimal explanations. As expected, I felt embarrassed too.

“The ones appointed will have to throw the excrement away every day. Because it could lead to a plague, you absolutely need to throw it away every day.” I explained. “You can throw it away at a faraway place to the south. But, before you throw it, you need to dig a hole to dispose it into. I will go with you tomorrow. Because this is unpleasant work, I will treat the one who does the job with liquor.”

“Oooh!!” A whole group of men who seemed to like liquor shouted joyfully.

Rewarding liquor for doing this dirty job was to prevent anybody from becoming lazy and not finishing the task.

By the way, the plan to use manure as fertilizer was rejected. While manure was certainly excellent fertilizer, but if there was even one mistake, the crops will be infested with parasitic worms. Around the time after the war, the US soldiers ate japanese vegetables raw and contracted food poisoning. This was a famous story in which McArthur flipped out.

“Then, next——” After that, I explained about the baths and sewers respectively .

Chapter 011 - The Start of Town ①

“Now, you decide which house you will live in.” I stated. “Ah, except for the biggest mansion, since it will be the chief’s residence. Now then, who wants to take the house next to the chief’s mansion?”

This feels like an auction. Nevertheless, when I looked at everyone’s faces, no one raised their hand.

Then, the chief, who couldn’t remain silent anymore, called out a person’s name.

“Zoan! Come out to the front!”

“Y-Yes!” The person replied.

I turned my face toward the one who replied. This person has thin hair, and looks almost like a human, at least according to the standards of this tribe. His thin hair and his facial features look like the chief's. Is he related to him?

"Your name?" I asked.

"I-I am called Zoan." He stammered.

"Do you have a family?" I questioned.

"Ah, yes. Oi, come here!" Zoan called out.

Then, someone who has much thicker hair than Zoan, plus a black nose that looks like a wolf's, appeared while leading a child by the hand. She looked like a mix between a human and a wolf.

“Could you tell me your name?” I asked.

“I-It’s Raguri.” She answered tensely.

I wrote their names on the paper in the language of this world smoothly.

The god didn’t only give me the knowledge of their language, but how to write it as well.

“That child?” I asked.

The child was holding Raguri’s hand with her finger placed in her mouth. When I ask Raguri for her name...

“Meg!”

I had intended to ask Raguri, but the child answered instead.

Probably because she’s still a kid, so she was fearless unlike the adults, and smiled like a sunflower to me.

“Is Meg-chan a girl or a boy?” I leaned over and looked into her eyes as I asked her.

Honestly, I feel that something is weird, but it might just be my imagination.

“A girl!” Meg answered bashfully.

She looks like a good child. I feel a little bit happy.

Then, I stand up and say to Zoan.

“Your house will be next to the chief’s house. The house will be in this first district, the first line and the second house, so it will be the house of 1-1-2.”

“Eh? 1-....?” Zoan sounded confused.

It seems like there was no concept of using numbers as the housing address here.

I said it again for Zoan who didn’t understand.

“1-1-2. You don’t need to memorize it now. I will explain it to the chief later on, so let’s learn the common sense of this town together slowly. ...Ah, wait a minute.”

I paused and headed to my truck. Naturally, all their eyes turned to look at me.

I summoned [Town Data] behind the seat, purchased [Konpeito], and left the truck.

[Konpeito (pack)] 9000 yen (Pouch 3000 yen)

“Meg-chan, please hold out your hand. I will give you something good.” I smiled.

When Meg heard about something good, Meg separated her hand from her mother’s hem, and stretched out both of her hands. Her parents trembled when they looked at their cute and obedient child.

I took out one konpeito from the pouch, and placed it onto Meg’s small palms.

“You hold it in your mouth, and lick it.” I instructed.

I didn’t say it in an indecent way, but, if it was in the original world, I would certainly be reported.

Meg ate the konpeito in one gulp.

“.....? ——Um!?” She moved her mouth in a strange way, and before long, her eyes were wide open. “Delicious!”

She beamed with joy that wasn’t seen until now. I smiled as well, but unfortunately, because I was wearing goggles and a face mask, the feeling wasn’t transmitted. Therefore, I give an exaggerated nod.

By the way, why konpeito instead of candy? The reason would be because of the size instead of the price. In my previous world, there were a lot of incidents where kids choke because of candy, and die. Well, it was much better than an emperor who choked on rice cakes. Next will be rice or bread, which should be ranked the 4th or 5th place as the cause of death.

“Well then, Zoan-san. You are free to go after this. Because there are cleaning tools in the house, you can clean up, or you can rest. Whichever one is fine. I will call you when it’s time for dinner.” I told him.

Next, the residents of the houses were selected in sequence. I wrote their names and addresses on the paper in my hand. Of course, I also gave one konpeito to each child.

If you want to defeat the general, start with their horse.

I will not say for what, but it is not that bad to capture the hearts of children with sweets. Occasionally, it's impressive that the adult was the one giving me a greedy look instead.

Finally, I wrote the names of the people who will live in the chief’s house, and the assignment of housing was finished.

I thought that I wouldn’t be able to fit all one hundred and eighty people from wolfmen tribe into one district, but, it was an unnecessary fear. After I settled everyone, there were two more houses left unused.

“Well, this is the end. Chief, please clean your own house as well.” I stated.

“I understand. ...Um, Fujiwara-sama.” The chief stared at me.

“Yes?” I asked.

“Really, thank you very much.” The chief lowered his head deeply, his long brown hair mixing with his white fur.

I didn’t ask how many people died before reaching here.

An aimless trip... I can’t imagine how much his burden was as the head of the whole tribe.

“...I just did what I wanted to. You don’t need to mind it.” I replied.

No matter how much goodwill I have, it’s just for my self-interest. But, it doesn’t feel bad to be thanked.

I pray that we can build a good relationship that will benefit each other.

_____ Like this, I was able to meet the long cherished residents of this town.

Chapter 012 - The Start of Town ②

It was the morning after the wolf tribe became residents of the town.

On that day, I, who usually idled around and indulged in my slumber leisurely, woke up from the sound of the digital clock on the table.

After waking up early, the first thing I had to do was to prepare breakfast for the tribesmen. Since it would be troublesome if they learned of luxury, I provided the same menu as yesterday's lunch and dinner.

Before long, the preparation of the meal was done, so I told the chief to gather everyone in front of the gate. Still, it's troublesome to have to call for him each time. In the future, I might connect a telephone line to the chief's house so that I wouldn't need to visit him for each task every time.

After a while, they finally gathered, and breakfast began at last. Everyone didn't complain about having the same meal as yesterday. They all ate with

great relish.

They rested for a while after eating breakfast.

Afterwards, I delivered kitchen utensils such as pots and kettles, firewood and firestones, as well as food like rice, and the instructions on how to cook them.

However, I wasn’t well versed in cooking by the old methods, thus, I could only tell them the amount of water needed to cook the rice at best. I hoped for them to polish their cooking skills through their own experience afterwards.

When all of that was over, I delivered a changes of clothes, and explained about the Goemon bathtubs while preparing hot water in front of them. They haven’t taken a single bath since they’ve arrived here, so they stank badly. After the explanation, I directed them to take a bath. That was all for the morning.

In the afternoon, I asked the chief to direct them to pull out the wild grass

that grows throughout the town. I also told them to pile up all of the collected grass in front of my house. The grass was Catherine's important feed after all.

Meanwhile, I had also planned to check the soil quality of this land's agricultural fields.

This time, I'm using this.

[Soil Acidity Examination Solution] 60,000 yen (List price 600 yen)

First, I placed the soil that has been brought from outside into the glass, poured in the modern [Tap-water], and stirred it. While waiting for the soil particles to sink to the bottom of the glass, I took out the clear water from the upper part of the glass, and moved it into a test tube. Finally, I added the examination solution into the test tube, and shook it. I would then judge the acidity level by its color.

“...As expected, it’s slightly alkaline.” I muttered like a professional while looking at the color from the test tube. But, in my hands was a book titled [First Time Agriculture that even Idiots can do!].

The soil of this land was of a chestnut color like the ones found in the desert. Back in my previous world, black soil (chernozem and prairie soil) was considered the most suitable soil medium for agricultural land.

Because this place is a desert, the necessary nutrition for the crops won’t be washed away by rain, and would remain on the soil.

But, there was a problem. The soil was alkaline, and there isn’t much crops that could grow in alkaline soil.

Well then, what would I need to do to make the crops grow in the alkaline soil?

The idea that flashed into my mind was to mix the soil with acidic fertilizer and neutralize the alkalinity. It was well known that people used quicklime, an alkaline fertilizer, to handle acidic soil. In this case, it should be possible to do the reverse

However, though the book mentioned the ways to turn acidic soil alkaline, the way to turn alkaline soil acidic wasn't written. I couldn't have known whether my assumptions would do the trick. I wondered why hadn't the book remarked on the problem. I couldn't help but come up with the foolish idea of Japan only having acidic soil.

Therefore, I summoned [Town Data].

"Hmm..." I hummed.

As I was looking at the [Fertilizer] category, I discovered one which costs 0 yen.

[Humus] 0 yen.

Alright, let’s buy it.

I left my house once I purchased the [Humus].

The humus appeared on top of the brown coloured soil. I often see this in forests; the black soil made from decaying trees, plants and leaves.

I took a sample of the black soil, and went to check its acidity like before.

“Oh, it’s slight acidic...” I mumbled in surprise.

Was it because it’s japanese soil, or was it because of the humus that it

became acidic? Ah, it doesn’t matter.

I pressed the purchase button for the [Humus] repeatedly, and placed the purchased items outside of the town. At the back of my home, a small hill of black humus was formed.

Now then, the matter regarding the acidity of the soil was settled. Next, I need brainstorm for solutions for another problem.

Arid lands mean that it is a land without rain. In other words, this was an area without water. Without water, the crops won’t grow. It’s basic knowledge. So, to sum it up, what should I do to get water into this dryland? This would be my next problem.

However, I didn’t need to think much about this problem. We could draw water from the river to the east and use it for irrigating the crops.

I have thought about using groundwater, but it would troublesome if the groundwater dried up since a large amount of water would be needed for the fields. Before I came to this world, the state of California in America depended on the groundwater too much, to the point they exhausted the groundwater as it didn't rain at all, and caused a severe drought. I remembered that it was a terrible state where the earth dried up and collapsed.

I will not make the same mistake as them.

Considering that there is a great river that flows from the north, I should be utilizing it well.

...Anyone could think of it up till here. However, I encountered one problem when I read the book, which was the damage from salt water. In dry lands, there's a natural phenomenon which causes salt to accumulate. Because the usage of water in dry lands would carry salt from underground and accumulate it on the surface of the soil, the salt would obstruct the growth of the crops.

The mechanism is as follows. As the water is distributed, the dry soil would absorb the water easily. The water would then penetrate deep into the ground, and absorb the mineral salts. Due to the high soil temperature, the water will

once again evaporate in the direction of the soil's surface, leaving a layer of dried mineral salts on the surface of the soil.

That was pretty much the gist of the problem.

There was a lot of talk about future food problems back in my original world. This problem was mainly caused by the shortage of land usable for agriculture due to the accumulation of mineral salts on the soil's surface, and also the increment of the human population.

As a countermeasure to the issue, it is important to minimize the water's seepage into the soil as much as possible, leaving only drip irrigation, where water is given to the plants at pin-point accuracy. This method is certainly wonderful, but the spending for this would be tremendous.

In any case, it would mean that a faucet was to be made for each and every crop planted. Just imagining it was already out of the question .

The other preventative measure was to make the plantation field a paddy field. With the equipment of the water supply and drainage system, it would prevent the salt from accumulating.

On the other hand, this method, again, needs to use lot of water to wash off the salt. Originally, a large quantity of water was already needed to wash the salt away, so this will cost a lot of money. But, fortunately, I could purchase water for free. I would only need to fix the topography to drain the water afterwards. However, I will then need to show my ability to other people.

As expected, it is important to practice an agricultural method that requires a controlled amount of water as much as possible. In other words, I need to produce crops that don’t need a lot of water.

Next, what are crops that are strong against drought? There are staple food like grains, corn, potatoes, sweet potatoes, and beans. For vegetables, there are tomatoes, eggplants, and green peppers. For fruit trees, there are dates and grapes. I think that’s about it....

I looked at the commodities in [Town Data], and there were all the names for those seedlings. Of course, when there are varieties of seeds enhanced by

hybridization (adjustments of the seed within a single life-time generation, leading higher quality crops compared to using pure-bred seeds. However, in the second generation and after, the effects of the adjusted DNA will disappear, and the crop yield will no longer be uniform), there are also pure breed varieties (throughout the second and third and its consecutive growth generations, crop yield will be uniform).

Now then, all of these were just the outline related to agriculture. We will start plowing the fields and sowing the seeds tomorrow.

Since I have to consider crop rotations as well, I wonder what should be planted next. Oh yeah, shall we plant the twenty day radish too, so that the people will be able to experience the joy of harvesting?

Ah, that’s right. I will also need to divide the fields too. The standard size for one field during the Edo era was... Around one thousand square metres. Certainly, the people of the Edo period harvested the amount of rice they would consume in one year, so the size of the field that would yield that amount should be considered one unit of field.

Well, I don’t plan to plant rice for now, so it doesn’t really matter. It would be

good as a reference for a standard field though.

I purchased a [Measuring Tape] and a [Wooden Stake], and surveyed the land alone. Afterwards, the tribesmen who have finished weeding the town proceeded to weed the area where I had surveyed.

...The town has started to progress slowly.

Chapter 013 - The Start of Town ③

At last, farming began in the town. The fields were being plowed, and the seeds were being sown.

Honestly, I don’t have any choice but to rely on the shallow textbook, so the agricultural process was still not out of the experimental level yet. But, at least we are at the starting line.

I will acquire experience little by little and develop better agricultural skills as time goes by.

That’s not all; the wolfman tribe had also spent their days in trial and error, trying to adapt to the new life in this town.

Time passed, and it has been one month since the wolfman tribe became residents of the town.

The sunlight was glaring down dazzlingly. According to the [Thermometer] hung outside, the temperature was above thirty degrees celsius. Because this place is dry, I can say that it’s much better than Japan’s summer season.

However, the place next to this land is a desert. Thus, I am worried about how much the temperature will increase from now on.

Another month passed by, and my town’s residents seemed to have gotten used to the life here.

On that day, we were harvesting radishes.

Outside of the town, a thin cloth screen was spread around the field. The cloth screen was used to adjust the temperature for the wolfmen who were lining up in rows in the field.

“Now then, shall I pull it out?” Chief Jiharu grasped the leaf that extended from the earth while being watched by the spectators who were filled with anticipation.

He pulled carefully. When he pulled it, there was not much resistance, and a round, red radish with small roots came out. When it was pulled out over his head, cheers of joy and clapping resounded.

It was the first crop that they’ve cultivated by themselves. Even the children and females who didn’t usually participate in farming came out to see the results.

I, who was looking from outside of the cloth screen, was happy. I held a banquet on the occasion of the first harvest.

I took the [Meat] out. This was the ingredient that I have never taken out till now. Because the Japanese were under the influence of buddhism, eating meat was considered taboo, and it continued till the late Tokugawa era. As result of that, I couldn’t purchase any edible meat other than [Chicken Meat]. But, of

course, I can purchase any [Meat] from the modern era.

I purchased a lot of [Chicken Meat]. As for the seasonings, I purchased [Soy Sauce], [Salt] [Pepper] , et cetera, and I also purchased [Sake] by the barrels. In addition, I constructed [Desks] for the venue, and placed [Iron Plates] for roasting the meat. [Stone] and [Oil] were prepared too.

I place all of that in front of my house's gate. Afterwards, I entrusted all the work to Chief Jiharu.

I didn't have any intentions to join the banquet. I never did like banquets even before coming here, since you need to socialise with other people.

Because I was the most important person here, I didn't need to care about someone else. But, in this case, other people will need to pay attention to me. Well, my position here is something similar to a popular boss after all.

However, because everyone was drinking liquor today, I would feel lonely if it was only me who didn't drink it, so I intend to celebrate today's harvest with Catherine inside my house.

Before long, night fell, and I could hear the lively voices from the banquet in the town at my home. I was sitting down on the ground with Catherine at my back while staring at the cloudless starry sky, drinking chuhai little by little.

The telephone's ringing sounded inside the house. I've connected a telephone cable from chief Jiharu's house to my house. I wondered why he was calling me, and went inside my house to pick up the receiver.

"Ah, is it Fujiwara-sama? This is Jiharu." The chief greeted.

"What happened?" I asked.

"Everyone said that they wanted to see Fujiwara-sama by all means…" Jiharu

sounded awkward.

I thought for a little bit. If they want me to go, then I think it is much better if I go. I tell them that I will go to the banquet venue immediately, and hung up.

After changing into my usual clothes, I went to district 13, which didn't have even a single building, and was thus used as the banquet venue, by foot.

"Ooo! It is Fujiwara-sama!" The chief, whose face has already become red, found me and called my name.

"Fujiwara-sama has come!"

"It's Fujiwara-sama!"

All the people here called my name when they saw me visit.

I feel a little embarrassed. My cheeks have already become hot under my face mask, and this wasn’t because I was just drinking alcohol up until a moment ago.

When I sat down at the seat of honour, a dish was carried to me immediately.

However, I noticed something. I was hiding my face, so, I can’t eat like this. Then, what should I do?

Do I need to open a space near my jaw and force the meal from there to eat? But, my nose and mouth will become visible... However, even for the wolfman tribe, their faces didn’t differ that much from a human's, so, I don’t think there would be any problems in particular.

But, at that moment, a thought was raised inside my mind. Is it already alright to show my face? Honestly, it is troublesome to cover my whole body with protection whenever I need to go outside.

In this one month, I have tried to win their favor. I think the time for it is ripe.

When I think about this, without asking for the chief's opinion, I took off my goggles, helmet and face mask.

"Ah..."

"Eh...?"

Some people noticed my appearance.

“Fu-Fujiwara-sama!” Chief Jiharu called my name, flustered.

“Hu....man....?”

Some people muttered.

There was a large disparity between the location of my ears and the wolfmen’s ears. My ears were at the side of my head while theirs were at the top of their head. It was obvious when I took off my helmet.

They were surprised when they saw that I am a human, and commotion spread out like a ripples on clear water.

But, I’ve already expected this.

“That is right. As you can see, I am a human!” Somehow, I shouted.

I might be excited because of the liquor.

[ED: This idiot… *facepalms*]

I continued my speech. “But, I am different from other humans! I am a human that came from a different continent! I showed my face today because I want you people to trust me!”

That reminds me, I forgot to use polite speech. It seems like I am drunk; as expected.

“I want to develop this town with everyone! However, that is not-”

-my only wish.

However, when I wanted to say that, I was disturbed by a banging noise.

Everybody, including me, turned their eyes to the source of the sound. There, a desk and a dish were turned over. The preparator was a girl who has an adult’s build, but still with a trace of innocence on her face.

It was a face which I have seen several times. There was always a shadow of grief on her face. That girl glared harshly at me, and said.

“We can’t trust what the human says! Because of hunger, my mother became sick and died in the middle of the journey! If the humans didn’t take our home, my mother would not have died!”

I see. I can understand the reason behind her grieving face now. However, it was still within my expectations.

However, as I wanted to retort back...

“How can you treat food poorly like this?!” The fist of a young man sent the girl flying.

Eh...?

I was stunned by this excessive response. I will say it once more. The young man ran to the girl suddenly, and beat her up.

The man didn’t seem to be going easy on her. Strong punches were dealt to this weak girl.

For me who was against violence, I wanted to look away from something this intense. But, I didn't, and unconsciously placed my hand on the gun holster on my waist in fear that something might happen.

The man grasped the lapels of the girl, and was still trying to hit her.

"You… You don't need to go that far! Someone stop him!" I shouted hurriedly.

Following my voice, the chief instructed people to stop him, and all the people who were stunned began to move.

The young man, who was hitting the girl, yelled while being grabbed from the back.

“How can you treat food this poorly even though we have trouble finding food to eat?!”

It was the truth. Food means life.

Back in my previous world, people tend to forget the importance of food. A person will die easily if they don’t eat for a few days. Then, in this world where it was much more difficult to obtain food, the value of food was more precious than in my previous world.

By the way, I have heard that the lump on the camel’s back stores fat. Because it can drink dozens of liters of water at the same time, it will not die even if it doesn’t eat or drink for a few days.

Catherine sure is awesome.

“Gu... Kuu… Uuuu...!” After the young man yelled about the importance of food, the girl couldn’t hold her tears anymore, and began to cry.

It was intense.

In addition, the younger children seemed to be frightened by the young man's voice, and began to cry as well.

"Um, I wonder if it is okay..?" I moved to break this situation. When I raised my voice, everyone turned their attention to me. "There might be people who don't trust me! I am sure of it! After all, I am a human! Even though I said that I wasn't from this continent, but, it's a fact that I am of the same race as the humans who have hurt you!"

I spoke without hesitation, even though I didn't know if my words fit the seriousness of the situation. This was the skill from being drunk. No, it's because I am drunk that I can say something from my heart.

"That is why I will not blame you if you want to leave this land! But, I would prefer to develop this town together with you. That is what I think!" After I said this, I left the place.

They will need time to think on this calmly.

“Fujiwara-sama!” After a slight delay, the chief ran after me.

I could see the uneasiness on his face.

“I will not cut you people off from the supplies. So, I hope that everyone won’t blame that girl.” I said without waiting for the chief’s words.

I think it was too early to show my face, but sooner or later, I will need to do this. I pray that it will be like the proverb “adversity strengthens the foundation”. It would be good if this incident managed to strengthen our trust in each other.

Chapter 014 - The Start of Town ④

The next morning, after the incident at the banquet, I was awoken by the ringing sound of the telephone. When I looked at the clock, it was still 7 am. At this time, I am usually still sleeping soundly.

There never was a case whereby the telephone will sound this early in the morning. Did something happen? While thinking such a thing, I answered the phone with sleepy eyes.

Then, I heard the voice of the chief from the other side of the receiver.

“Fujiwara-sama, this is Jiharu.”

“What happened?” I asked.

“I’m sorry, but could some of the people take an absence from today’s work?” He requested.

“Can you tell me the reason why?” I questioned.

“That is....” The chief seems to have a hard time answering. It was clear that there was a problem in the tribe, and the cause might be from yesterday’s incident. “Mira, the girl who caused the problem yesterday, has disappeared...”

“Only her?” I woke up slightly.

“Yes.” He replied.

“Since when?” I questioned.

“I don’t know. But, it was probably last night...” Jiharu answered unsurely.

“Is there a possibility that she is still in the town?” I asked.

“We are searching for her now. However, since the west gate was open...” The chief trailed off.

“I understand. Please gather everybody in front of the gate at once.” I requested.

I have lost my drowsiness already. I cut the call, and left the house to prepare the truck. I have placed a drum at the edge of the site. It was filled with [Oil], which I pumped out to fill up the fuel tank. After topping up the fuel, I moved the truck behind the gate.

When I took off the bolt and opened the gate, the people from the wolf tribe

were already waiting outside.

I made everyone move back, and stopped the truck in front of the gate. Afterwards, I got off from the truck, and heard the story from the chief.

“Chief, were there footprints of Mira outside of the town?” I asked.

“There are none. But, even if Mira is outside of the town, it will be hard to leave footprints behind because the ground is hard. They will also be covered by sand blown over by the wind immediately.” The chief answered.

“Hmm. Then, if we assume that Mira left the town, I think her destination is southwards, along the river. What do you think?” I suggested.

“Yes, I think so too. If she moves to the north, she will go back to the place where we came from, and the east is blocked by river. If she goes to the west...” When the chief talked about the prediction if she had gone to the west, his

words become a bit evasive.

If she was moving towards the west, then it would be almost impossible to find her. If she didn't leave a mark, we wouldn't know where she went to.

"Then, Chief. Will you look around downtown, and around the town with everyone? I will go search the south with the truck." I requested.

"I understand." The chief nodded.

I turned my head from the chief towards the people who've already gathered.

"From now on, I will go and look for Mira with this truck. With the exception of the chief, I need one person with me. Who wants to come with me?" I asked.

The crowd murmured, and became hesitant. It was because they feel something like fear towards the truck.

Meanwhile, a person appeared right in front of me.

“I’m Bozugado. Please take me along.” He stated. It was the man who hit Mira yesterday.

“Alright. Then, Chief Jiharu, you will direct them inside the town. Please be careful so that there will be no new victims while you search.” I instructed.

The people from the wolf tribe started to search with the instructions of the Chief again.

I taught Bozugado how to open and shut the door, and let him sit at the seat next to the driver. Furthermore, I made him fasten the seat belt. After giving

him simple instructions, I went to the driver's seat.

When I started the truck, Bozugado tensed up. Well, he will get used to it quickly.

After I passed the town's west gate, I drove the truck southwards.

The clouds of dust were dancing to match the revolving tires. At the first glance, the ground looked flat, but there were uneven parts here and there, unlike the concrete road. If Mira was hiding, it would be difficult to find her. That is why, the speed was only 40 km/h.

I drove the truck at low speeds while observing the surrounding areas. Because Bozugado was sitting at the passenger's seat, I handed a pair of binoculars to him, and let him look around.

"Fujiwara-sama." Bozugado stopped using the binoculars, and opened his

mouth suddenly.

“What is it?” I asked.

“Can you forgive Mira?” He sighed.

(Why did he suddenly ask this?)

“Mira thinks well of Fujiwara-sama. Especially for that girl, who was smaller than me, the reason why we can feel the happiness of eating until our stomachs are full was thanks to Fujiwara-sama. I usually hear about this from her. But even so, it was a regret that she couldn’t have met with Fujiwara-sama much earlier.” Bozugado explained.

“It’s about her mother, huh..?” I sighed.

“Yes. Mira’s father died before she was even aware of things around her. I think her love for her mother was much deeper because of that. In the middle of the journey, because we hardly ate anything, Mira’s mother died from a disease.” The tribesman stated.

“...I see.” I muttered.

——Parents, huh? I have parents too. They were very normal parents. When I left the previous world, they would probably grieve like everyone else.

I am living in another land now. If they know about this, would it help them? However, that will never happen. That is why I stop myself from thinking too much about my parents.

“I understand the feeling of losing one’s parents as well, so, it’s okay.” When I said these words, Bozugudo thanked me, and resumed searching the surrounding area.

The truck continued moving southwards. One hour had passed since we left the town.

I don’t know when Mira left the town, but, it’s strange that we haven’t caught up to her yet after this much of a distance. Did we miss her, or maybe she didn’t move towards the south? Could it be that she went towards the north where her mother died?

It was when I thought about such a thing that Bozugudo yelled.

“There! There she is! Just a little bit further!”

I stepped on the accelerator. Before long, I saw the figure of Mira’s back before my eyes. The other side seemed to have noticed us too, and started to run. Then, she fell down.

The truck caught up to Mira in no time.

“Mira!” Bozugudo got down from the truck, and ran towards her.

Mira was holding a bow, but for the time being, it doesn’t seem like she will attack us. She was caught by Bozugudo easily.

When I considered the distance, it must’ve taken Mira all night for her to reach here. She must be tired, and didn’t have the power to resist.

I got off from the truck and went to Mira as well. Then, Mira glanced at me, and averted her eyes from me. She seemed to be awkward and embarrassed to see me. This was what I got from my impression.

“I heard about your mother.” When the word ‘mother’ comes out from my mouth, Mira glared at me suddenly, but I continued to speak without minding it. “Beyond this desert, there is only land where plants don’t grow. Even if you

go there, you will only die.”

“That is still good! If I die, I will go to my mother’s side!” She yelled.

“Don’t say such a stupid thing!!” I shouted angrily.

In this one month that I’ve spent together with them until now, I have never gotten angry even once. Because of that, I can see the astonishment of Mira and Bozugudo.

I just continued my speech.

“If you are dead, do you think your mother who you love so much will be pleased?!” I’m actually not that angry inside of my heart.

The words I said just now were just ordinary persuasion so that Mira will want to return to the town. Actually, if I was in Mira's shoes now, if someone said something like that to me, I will surely suspect that person. It was because suspicious words like these were overused in the previous world. However, in this world, they didn't have the opportunity to see such ordinary situations that appear often in manga and drama, so my remark should be something new for them.

"It is not only your mother, everyone will grieve for you as well! All of them were doing their best to look for you now! Do you intend to make them sad? Your life isn't just yours only, you know?!" I said angrily.

I wonder if she was touched by my words, as Mira was hanging her head while keeping silent. I lowered my voice a little bit now, and comforted her.

"Your mother... Her wish was for your smiling face above everything, right..?" These words were the conclusion.

Mira burst into tears on the spot. She herself understood that what she did

was foolish, and based on her agitated emotions. At any rate, I have completely won the argument...

On the way home.

Mira was sitting in the middle of the seat, and the truck was heading back towards the town.

I said such a thing to her.

“For example, can a person live by himself? There’s that question. The answer is yes, you can live by yourself. But, two people are better than one person, and three people are better than two. If many people cooperated with each other, a person’s life can become more meaningful.” I stated. “I’m a person who lives a luxurious life. However I didn’t only give it to all of you. Because I work for a better life, I’m helping you guys. And, this is not limited to living. More than one person, or two people, more than two people, or three people… If everyone is smiling, my smile will become wider as well.”

Where have I heard this stinking speech? However, since it is not wrong, I think this speech is just ordinary.

Chapter 015 - Wolf Clan

Mira was taken back to the town safely, and peaceful days returned to the town again.

A few days after the series of disturbances...

On that day, the people of wolf tribe who have finished their work at the field, had their dinner and bath, and finished the things that they usually do for the day for the most part .

The sky became dark.

As it doesn’t rain, moonlight shone down onto the land without obstruction, its brightness so strong that you could walk around without any other illumination.

Meanwhile, footsteps could be heard rumbling the ground. Towards the mansion of Chief Jiharu in the first district of the town, males of the wolf tribe gathered there one after another.

“Hey, do you know what the meeting was about?”

“No, I didn’t hear anything.”

The males of the wolf tribe kept entering Chief Jiharu’s mansion one after another.

Inside the mansion, the sliding doors that divide the rooms were removed, connecting the four rooms into one. A large rectangular room was formed. The moonlight that poured into the room from the opened window shone, illuminating Chief Jiharu who was sitting in the deeper part of the room .

“Is everyone here?” The chief murmured to no one in particular.

The wolf tribe’s males had lined up before the chief and sat down in rows, and just now, the last person just entered. The orphaned children who lived with the chief have been left in the care of a different house for now, because the talk is confidential

“How is Mira doing?” Jiharu asked.

“She is working on the fields harder than anyone else. Father should know about this.” The one who answered Jiharu’s question was his son, Zoan, who was sitting in the front row.

“Hmm, that’s right.” Jiharu smiled warmly.

As the leader, the chief is like the parent of the whole tribe. In other words, Mira is his cute child as well.

“So what is it today, chief? We need to wake up early tomorrow, so please finish this quickly.” One of the men said.

“What I want to discuss about is Fujiwara-sama.” The chief showed a serious face.

It was a face which the chief had never showed to Nobuhide ever since he became the head of the town.

Tensions suddenly ran high in the room. One grasped his fist, while another swallowed his saliva.

“I don’t like this!” No one knows exactly what was being imagined, but a certain young man stood up and raised his voice. His name was Bozugado. It was the man who had looked for Mira together with Nobuhide. “He has treated us very nicely! Why can’t we just leave things as it is?”

“I don’t know if you’ve misunderstood something, but I don’t have any intention to harm Fujiwara-sama. So, don’t say such a silly thing.” The chief shook his head.

After hearing the words of Jiharu, everybody was clearly expressing their relief. Everyone had been holding the same suspicions as Bozugado.

“Then, what is it about?” Bozugado, feeling ashamed that he had jumped to conclusions, sat down while blushing, and a different person asked this time.

“Hmm. We intend to follow Fujiwara-sama as it is. That is why, what we should fear for is if Fujiwara-sama has a change of heart.” Jiharu stated.

“No, Fujiwara-sama will never forsake us!” One man argued.

“How you can be so sure? Fujiwara-sama is a human. We are of the wolf tribe. Right now, there are no humans around Fujiwara-sama. However, if a human manages to come to this land, what will happen?” The chief sighed. “No, not only humans. If we consider the humans’ oppressive nature, I think other beastmen aside from us will come to this land too. If that time comes, will we still receive the same treatment we are as now?”

The person who was asking the question turned silent. Others had shut their mouths too, unable to retort.

Then, the chief said.

“That is why I intend to have Fujiwara-sama become a wolfman as well.”

The others didn’t seemed to grasp his intentions.

A human is a human. A wolfman is a wolfman. There is no way that can be changed.

Everyone was staring at Chief Jiharu with pitiful eyes, as if he has no idea what he had just said.

“Can you please not look at me with such eyes? What I meant was not such a nonsensical like asking him to be reborn as a wolfman.” Jiharu rolled his eyes.

“Then, what is it?” The son of Chief Jiharu asked on behalf of all the members present.

“It’s easy. He will take a wife from the wolfman clan, and have a child.” The chief smirked.

Ooooh... Everyone was impressed. Certainly, if a child was born, it would become a bond that could never be severed.

The thing about the difference in race… With Nobuhide belonging to a different race, everyone seemed to have forgotten of the concept of marriage as an option.

“Then, my daughter!”

“No, my daughter!”

“No, no, my daughter!”

Those who have a daughter hurriedly proposed an engagement for Nobuhide and their daughter. There were some people had had said strange things too, but no one considered them.

Nobuhide was the one in charge of all the things in this land. There is nothing but honor to have their daughter marry someone like Nobuhide. If their

daughters were to be married to Nobuhide, as his father-in-law, they have calculatively thought that they should have gotten some leftovers too. They are also especially fond of the liquor. Should their daughter be married to Nobuhide, they had hoped to receive a lot of celebratory drinks.

“Isn’t your daughter just 8 years old?!”

“Shut up! Who knows if he’s a pervert who’s fond of children!”

“The one in my house is the most beautiful!”

“What! Rather than that homely-looking daughter of yours, the most beautiful girl in the world is my daughter!”

All of them became hot headed. All of the people who had daughters stood up, naturally breaking out into an unsightly quarrel. .

“Stop it!!” A thundering voice echoed .

Although he was close to 60, the chief was proud that he hasn’t been defeated by the younglings yet. Befitting of such intimidation, with the addition of the wrinkles that comes with experience, it was truly an intense expression.

All the members were overwhelmed by the Chief’s voice, and their bodies started to tremble. The triangular ears on the top of their heads flattened down, and they sat back down quietly. Everyone pulled themselves together, and began listening again.

“In fact, I have already decided who is it.” However, the statement that left the Chief’s mouth was something shocking - the settled decision of the bride candidate.

“Eeeh...”

“Such a thing...”

People who recommended their daughters muttered frustratedly in vexation.

“Then, who is it?” Zoan asked.The chief glanced around the room once, and said a name.

“It’s Razuri.”

Oooooh... Everyone was stirred up.

That girl was considered to be the most beautiful amongst the unmarried ones. Wherever Razuri would walk, every man from the wolf tribe would turn to

look. A sigh would escape their lips by just remembering her figure. She was a beauty of that level.

“If it’s her, then she will be most suitable for Fujiwara-sama. Does anyone have any objections?” The chief looked around again.

“Well, if it’s Razuli...”

“Ah, then it is not where my daughter can come out.”

With that beautiful girl in front of them, no matter how cute their daughter was, they will have no chance to beat her at all. Everyone didn’t have any choice but to pull back.

“Then, the decision is made. Tomorrow, I will introduce her to Fujiwara-sama. I will make this marriage a success by all means. We shall make our clan prosper!” The chief declared this as he stood up energetically, raising his fist.

Then, everyone’s cheer burst out. Afterwards, the chief opened up the sake jug that Nobuhide handed to the chief for cases like this, and poured each person a cup before dissolving the meeting.

◆

Early afternoon of a certain day.

Nobuhide received a telephone call from Chief Jiharu. The content was that he wanted to talk in a quiet place.

Nobuhide tilted his head in puzzlement. When he asked about the outline of the business, Chief Jiharu dodged the questions, and left Nobuhide with vague answers. Because he can’t invite him to his house, the talk will be held in the chief’s mansion.

Even though he didn’t think that they would ambush him this late in the game, but just in case, he armed himself before leaving for the chief’s house with the truck. He especially drove the truck so that if there was something wrong, he could run immediately.

The chief stood at the entrance. When I looked at him, he seemed to be smiling like usual.

“Welcome. Come, come, this way.” The chief ushered.

Unlike the other houses, at the edges of the Chief’s house is a corridor. Beside the corridor are four rooms lined up. Through this corridor, I was led to the innermost room. There, one woman was sitting down .

“Chief, this is...?” Nobuhide asked with a perplexed expression.

Thus the chief said it while feigning ignorance.

“On this occasion, by all means, I intend for Fujiwara-sama to marry Razuri, the most beautiful girl in our tribe. Thus, I called you to this place.”

“Eh...?” He was surprised and speechless. Nobuhide was hit by a tremendous surprise.

(To take a wife? Marriage? With whom? I, with this woman..?)

Nobuhide’s brain shifted from surprise to confusion. No, perhaps if she was not there, Nobuhide would not be as shaken as this.

According to the wolf tribe, what exactly is their definition of a pretty woman? As their name indicates, the wolf tribe was evolved from wolves. In addition, they would have extraordinary pride as a wolf as well. You can even

say that it is their faith. Therefore, the standard of their beauty…

As Nobuhide's eyes moved in a strange manner, Razuri smiled at Nobuhide. It should be a smile to the extent that it would take the hearts of the wolfmen, but to Nobuhide, it just made his heart shudder.

The reason was because the very person in front of him was like a wolf itself, her body covered in thick fur, eyes sharp, and nose sticking out further than her mouth. Yes, Razuri was a woman who has strongly inherited the blood at the time when she was still a wolf.

Sharp teeth peeped out from the gap of her mouth when Razuri smiled. From Nobuhide's viewpoint, what he saw was a wolf smiling evilly in front of its prey.

[ED: People who are into beastiality or furries would probably be happy though…]

(Awawawawa!!!!)

His body's trembling intensified.

For humans, when an unexpected thing happens, their thoughts will falter. Nobuhide's brain that usually works as perfectly as it is, has stopped working.

"Ooh, Fujiwara-sama must be trembling because of Razuri's excessive beauty too. Then, I will let you young people take your own time." The chief left the room after misunderstanding something.

(Wait a minute! What made you think like that?!)

After receiving the chief's unwelcomed action of goodwill, Nobuhide couldn't help but complain in his mind.

“Fujiwara-sama, please sit down.” Razuri’s voice was beautiful and kind, unlike her face.

(Aah... she doesn’t mean any harm either...)

At this point, Nobuhide had finally calmed down. This sudden marriage meeting with the woman with a wolf’s face. He can generally guess the real intentions of the chief. That is why, Nobuhide thought that she must have been a victim too.

Of course Nobuhide declined the marriage proposal. Afterwards, he had to exert fairly reasonable care so that he wouldn’t hurt Razuri’s feelings.

Chapter 016 - Two Years Later ①

When it rained, the ground hardened, or so I judged.

Since I have confessed that I am a human, I feel that the trust of the wolf tribe towards me has strengthened steadily.

Before long, the hot summer season has come along. The heat wave's temperature exceeded 40 degrees celsius. The wolfmen were drinking water frequently. In addition, I have told them to take a rest immediately when their bodies start to feel uncomfortable.

For Catherine to avoid the sunlight, I have at least built a hut with a roof for her. However, she plopped herself down under the sunlight without entering the hut. It looks like the lump of fat on the back of the camel isn't only to store the energy, it seems have a role of blocking sunlight as well. That is why, Catherine was still calm even though she was under the blazing hot sun.

I can’t help but say ‘As expected of her’.

As for me, I spent my days leisurely in my room that was installed with an air conditioner. My daily life was going smoothly. It feels like I am back in my previous world recently.

When summer passed, the town was going to be at a turning point again.

When the temperature during daytime fell to 30 degrees, it became much easier to spend time outside, and my time going outside increased as well. On that day, I got onto Catherine’s back, and made my rounds around the town. The walk was for Catherine who lacks exercise.

Catherine parades around the town with comfortable steps. Before long, I have reached the vacant land at district 13, and I heard the happy voices of the children. When I looked, I saw the children of the wolf tribe playing noisily with the soccer ball which I gave them.

“Ah! It’s Fujiwara-sama!” One of the children noticed me.

Then, everyone stopped playing and called my name as they came over to me.

Fu fu, good boys, good boys.

Still, it feels strange now. Everyone has ears at the top of their heads, and there are some children’s faces that completely look like a wolf. When I think about how they evolved seriously, I stopped because I don’t think that I will be able to sleep at night.

“Are you guys doing well?” I asked.

I got down from Catherine, and take the bag of konpeito from my breast pocket. The children, with delighted faces, thrust both of their hands toward me.

“Get in line.” I stated.

I drop the konpeito one by one onto their palms. When the children get it, they immediately throw it inside their mouths, and rolled with their tongues. The figures of children eating the the konpeito with great relish filled me with a warm and fluffy feeling.

“Fujiwara-sama, do you want to play football together?” The boy was using honorifics that doesn’t seem suitable in the children.

He has the face of a wolf, and he was the smartest among the children. It looks like he’s the leader of the group.

When it was midsummer, the children can’t go out and play, so I handed over a board game and cards. The other boys had lost against this boy since the board game was a game using one’s mind. The other boys had fallen behind him. It was an unforgettable memory.

“Then, I will also participate.” I smiled.

I rubbed Catherine back and said ‘I will play a little bit’. As if she understood my words, she went to the roadside, folded her legs, and laid on her stomach while yawning. She is very smart.

I removed my heavy bulletproof vest, and spent my time with the children until 1 pm. But, I was cut off half way.

“Fujiwara-sama! Something happened!”

A female beastman appeared with a stern appearance. This state clearly looks unordinary. In fact, the next words that come out from her mouth suprise me.

“A large number of shadows appeared northeast of the town!”

“..! Is the other side human!?” I asked urgently.

“No. Because it was too far, we can’t be sure!” She replied.

“I understand! Stop all the people that are working on the farm and call them back to the town quickly! Children should break up and go back to your houses!” I ordered.

I put on my bullet proof vest again, and returned to my home with Catherine. And then, I wore the mask and goggles. Furthermore, I had my rifle in my hand as I boarded the truck.

Will they come to North gate, or will they come from East gate? I was at a loss for a moment. If I go around from the East gate to the North gate, there will be a lot of time lost.

First, I go towards the East gate. After a while, I arrived at the east gate. There were no people from the wolf tribe here. That means the opposite party came from the north gate.

I stepped on the accelerator.

After a while, I arrived at North gate, and the people of the wolf tribe had already arrived. Some of the men on the stone walls were nervous.

“Fujiwara-sama!” Chief Jiharu ran towards me when I got off from the truck.

“Is the opposite party coming to the North Gate?” I questioned.

“Yes, there is still some considerable distance, but they are heading here.” He replied.

“Do you know of their race?” I asked.

“I can see some people with a cat’s face. However, because they are some distance away, I can’t be sure.” The chief answered.

It looks like they are not humans. I feel relieved. But, it is not a trivial thing. If they come to this wasteland intentionally, then they are following the wolf tribe’s pattern.

At the east side is a field. So, it will not be a problem if they come from the north. I need to be careful since the town’s stone wall doesn’t have turrets, and I need to pay attention to long distance attacks from bows.

I also feel nervous as I waited for the visitors.

When the opposite party approached this place, I could see their faces clearly. Among the people that look like humans, there are certainly some people that look like cats mixed in.

Before long, they had reached 200 meters from here.

“Stop there!” I shouted loudly.

Then, the people of cat tribe stopped. They have more people than the people from the wolf tribe. I think there is around 300 people there.

“If you have a request, I will hear it!” I shouted again.

Then one of the people, who called himself the chief of the cat tribe, answered.

“Can you share some food with us!?” The thing they said was as expected, it was the same as the people of wolf tribe.

Only after a dialogue did I treat them to the meal. And when their meal was over, I discussed together with the chief of the cat tribe together with Chief Jiharu, and it was decided that they will become residents of this town.

That was the beginning of people of different races coming to this town one after the other from autumn to winter. They were the Leopard tribe, Bird tribe, Deer tribe, Pig tribe, Raccoon tribe, Goblin tribe, and Kobold tribe.

It wasn’t necessary to explain about the beastman, although I was a little bit interested in how the creatures which have hooves can turn into five fingers and toes on their hands and feets.

But, explanation will be needed for the Goblins and the Kobolds. Both of them were creatures that I’ve only heard of in games, fantasy novels and movies. Both of them had sharp ears and big noses. They gave an impression of humans with green skin.

The height was different for Goblins and the Kobold tribe. The Goblins were short like children, and the Kobolds had heights that doesn't seem much different from the humans'.

The clothes they wore were more elaborate than the beastmen, showing their intelligence level. When I focused on their hand, I saw that they have big hands and long fingers that doesn't match their thin bodies. They told me that they are proud of their skillful hands.

And then, the Cat and the Goblin tribes, as well as the other tribes that were chased by humans, said that they went south alongside the river, and arrived here.

I would like to accept them as residents of this town. However, there is a problem with the division of housing.

At first, when I made this town, I didn't think about the difference in race. I

assumed that all the residents will be from the same race, so I thought that I should divide the people that will live here in two afterwards. As a result, the 16 districts were divided equally.

In one district, there are 47 houses. 4 to 5 people can fit in one house, so one district can fit 188 to 235 people. For example, the cat tribe has nearly 300 people, so it will be a problem since a fraction of their people will not be able to fit inside one district.

I thought about mixing them up with the others, but the peace and order of this town would deteriorated. For example, the Goblin and the Kobold tribe, even though they are from the same tribe, they are on bad terms with each other as if they are cats and dogs.

Well, it’s because the Kobolds were proud of their height, and this made the goblins envy them, so it can’t be helped if a story like that happened.

Anyway, if I mix the races now, it will certainly become the root of quarrels. Then, is it alright if I seperated every tribe?

As expected, fights will break out easily as the group grows bigger in this case. But, I should begin to mediate the issues.

In short, it will be hard to judge small fights in places where I can’t see. So, I gathered every tribe, and their chief will take command of their own tribe, such is the method I chose.

When it comes to this issue, eventually, I coped by dividing the districts into ovals using fences. The people from other tribes were told not to enter inside the fence without their permission. Of course, I can enter without their permission, but...

There is still a number of houses inside the town that can afford to house more people. However, if they have children, and their families increased, the town will be full immediately. I have to think about making new houses outside of the town.

The agriculture was doing ok. There was some deficit at first, however, it gradually improved, and it already shifted back to black. If the number of people increase, the black ink will increase too.

As the calm time passed, it has already been 2 years since I arrived in this different world. That year, I was able to see a human at last.

Chapter 017 - Two Years Later ②

“Fuwa~a…” I woke up around noon, and looked at the calendar while yawning.

April 12.

It was the day on which I arrived in this world. This means that this town has reached its 2nd birthday today.

Yes, this is indeed a happy occasion. That is why I intend to hold a banquet today. Even though I have been always carefree, I planned on announcing the banquet while watching everyone work after a long time.

I ate [Soba] for my late breakfast, and wore my equipment besides my headgear, and went to town on Catherine’s back.

The inflow of immigrants to the town had stopped suddenly a year ago, and the sudden population growth disappeared. But since then, the town was slowly growing.

The town's industry isn't just agriculture anymore. The manufacturing industry and building trade were entrusted to the Goblins and Kobolds who are skillful with their fingers.

After all, I can't always provide the insufficient things forever. Now, I would hand over the materials to them, and let them make the necessary things with it.

"Yo, how's the progress?" I called out.

"Oh, Fujiwara-sama." The Kobold's chief looked up.

The place was immediately outside of the west gate. The Kobolds had laid sun dried bricks there, creating several rectangular houses.

“How are the houses?” I asked.

“Yes, I think the durability has become much better. However, as expected, I can’t say anything until the ground shaking actually happens.” He reported.

The brick house they had completed last time had been easily destroyed when a small earthquake happened recently.

So this time, they added an improvement - placing lumber between the bricks when building the houses.

There’s a reason to build the houses in this way. If it was only to build a

sturdier house, I would only need to provide a large quantity of lumber for them to build the wooden houses.

However, it would cost money. Considering the saturation of the population in the future, we would need to find a cheaper building method.

“If it is still useless, maybe it would be better to consider something like a tent.” I suggested.

“Eh, a tent?” The chief was a little surprised when he heard the word tent from my mouth.

Perhaps in his mind, he was imagining a three pole pillar covered with animal skin, which looks like those shabby conical dwellings.

However, what I was thinking was the Yurt which the nomadic Mongolians use. It's a dwelling that has nothing to criticise on, a truly splendid building.

By bundling up thin timbers for the framework, it becomes flexible and strong against shaking. We don't have wool to make curtains to cover the house, but raw cotton is being grown. The cotton will be enough as a substitute for the sheep's wool.

Even if it collapses during an earthquake because the structure used was light weight, the residents will not be harmed.

"Well, anyway, can I entrust the designing of the houses to you?" I requested.

"Yes, leave it to me!" The chief replied enthusiastically.

"Ah, that's right. A banquet will be held today in front of the north gate. After the bell signalling the end of work rings, those who want to participate can come to the gate while bringing their own glasses. Please inform everyone in your tribe." I instructed.

“Is that true?! I understand!” He was very excited.

After informing him about the banquet, I pulled on Catherine’s reins and left the place.

“Oi, it seems like there is a banquet today! We can drink liquor free of charge!” The chief announced.

“Uhyo~! Thank you very much, Fujiwara-sama!”

I could hear the joyful voices of the Kobolds behind me.

What came next was a pasture next to the place where the Kobolds were

building the houses. Several dozens of camels were kept there.

Now then, the story was from last winter. It dates back to a chilly morning day.

I was sleeping soundly like a log when my telephone rang suddenly. According to the explanation, the camels were eating the crops. Because the person who found about the problem knew I was taking good care of Catherine, instead of handling it themselves, they reported it to me.

Of course, I forbid them from harming the camels immediately. And then, the camels became holy creatures and partners to the townspeople.

But, camels have rough tempers. It can be said that Catherine is a graceful lady and was attached with me immediately, but, the other camels weren’t so quiet.

As a result, I made the Goblin tribe create a pasture outside of the town first. I personally hand feed the camels in order to get them used to people.

When the camels got used to people, it's when they show their true value. The camels are wonderful They could plow the fields, carry heavy baggages, and let people ride on them. Camels' milk is also very nutritious. I don't have anything to say anymore.

Furthermore, the dry feces of Camels can be used directly as fuel. When there are a lot of people using firewood, the cost isn't something to be sneezed at.

There were some people that showed disapproval at first, but when I began to sun dry it, the others started to follow. In this way, the town obtained another source of fuel aside from firewood.

The camels were not only a source of labour, but also a source of energy. They had already become a necessary friend to this town.

Getting back to the subject...

The pasture was divided into eight fields, and the camels that each tribe keeps spend their time leisurely.

By the way, there are nine tribes inside the town, but the number of ranches was one short. This was because the goblins' group has small bodies, so I judged it as dangerous.

The Goblin tribe enviously opposes the Kobolds, saying [We want camels too!], but of course, I couldn't approve of it. At that moment, they have shown a vexed expression.

Nowadays, I have been wondering if I could have gotten them ponies instead.

“Yo, how are the camels?” I called out.

“Ah, Fujiwara-sama. All the camels are doing well.” The one who just spoke was a man from the Deer tribe who had just returned with the camels tied in tow.

The camels were brought to feed on the grass of lands planned for agriculture.

“How is it? Is there any promising stock suitable to become Catherine’s groom?” At the same time, I asked so.

“GUEEEEE!!!” Catherine cried out.

Then, as if to escape Catherine, all the camels in the pasture moved to the corners.

“Hahaha....” The man smiled wryly.

This was the response. The other camels only had one hump. However, Catherine’s body is much bigger than other camels, and has 2 humps too. All the other camels feared Catherine.

“Alright, alright. You still have me.” I consoled.

While patting Catherine’s scruff, I conveyed that I will hold a banquet today, and left the place.

Next, I went to the farm. The farming zone spread all over the east side of town. Due to the vast area, the people in charge of the distant farmlands could be seen using the camels every morning and evening.

This place was used as a crop rotation field, and has some irrigation.

I had intended to prevent the salt accumulation on the land with the incorporation of salt absorbing plants in the crop rotation, but, this was a story for the future.

During harvest time, the crops collected will be stored inside the high wall that I had built recently at the back of my home, where I was secretly [selling] them afterwards.

Every month, I [purchased] [rice] and distributed it equally to the people of the town Like this, the troublesome tax management was simplified.

But, if it remains like this, the townspeople wouldn’t feel right about it. For that reason, I had discreetly prepared a field for each tribe which they could use as they pleased.

Of course, I will be troubled if they only work on their own fields, so the size of the fields will be adjusted depending on the number of people inside the tribes.

In addition, when I distributed the food, I also circulated some [Japanese Yen]. With this money, they can use it to buy luxury goods like liquor in the town.

By the way, introducing Japanese Yen would not affect the [Time Period]. This would not mean that it equals to the [Buying] of the [Japanese Yen], but rather a [Cashing] of the currency of the world's data.

In the first place, all of Edo period's things were bought with the currency value of a modern world. In regards to the currency used, it is obvious to say that the [Time Period] would have no effect on it.

The ones in charge of agriculture were the beastmen. I looked over everyone farming while being jolted on Catherine's back, and I returned after informing everyone about the banquet today.

Finally, after I arrived in town, I went to visit the Goblin tribe. The 16th district was formerly a vacant land, but now, several shacks have been built, and the goblins were working outside.

The goblins were basically the town's handymen. They create and repair the stuff that the townspeople requested and ordered.

During their free time, they made the stuff that I had ordered.

"Ah, Fujiwara-sama." Upon noticing me, the chief came and greeted me.

"How is the spinning wheel?" I asked

What I had asked was regarding the spinning wheel that was to be mass produced. The spinning wheel was used to create yarn. Once, India launched a Swaraj Campaign against a large country like Britain. It was also a famous

symbol used by Gandhi.

“There are no problems as far as for the manufacturing goes. However, if we need to provide one for each family, it will some take time, as expected.” He reported.

“Hmm...”

I looked at the people who were working From the looks of it, the members of the Goblin tribe seemed to be making one machine each.

“Then, how about making it like this?” I gave a suggestion.

It’s work allotment. Select a person to make each part, and each person will produce that part only. Afterwards, a different person will assemble it. Well, it’s common sense in the modern era.

“Hmm...” The chief seemed to be thinking.

As people who have strong spirits of craftmenship, I have heard that they were eager to do it by themselves from the beginning to the end.

“It is simply an idea. If you are reluctant about it, you can do it as it is now.”

“No, let’s try it. If we don’t try it, we will not know if it is good or bad.” The chief decided.

Oh, he said something good there.

“Then, I’ll be counting on you.” I stated.

Finally, I conveyed that I will hold a banquet and left the place.

In the evening, a banquet to celebrate the second anniversary since the town was built commenced.

They showed great excitement for the party. However, the fact that the town hit its 2nd anniversary was only known by me.

Chapter 018 - Human ①

When I recorded the temperature for one year, I finally understood the four seasons of this land.

	The highest temperature	The lowest temperature
January	10.8	-0.1
February	13.2	1.3
March	18.0	5.1
April	24.8	10.7
May	28.1	12.9
June	34.7	16.0
July	40.2	20.0
August	39.4	19.2
September	33.1	15.3
October	26.0	11.1
November	18.0	5.3
December	11.6	0.7

[TL: All of it was in celsius]

The Goblin tribe and the Kobold tribe seemed to have mingled with humans in the past, and this world seems to have 365 days in one year too. I've only arrived in this world two years ago in April, but after a year, I learnt that the April in the previous world occurs at the same time as the April in this world.

——And then, the town's 2nd anniversary in April was over. It's already May, and the sunlight has gradually become stronger.

Today, when I was playing with Catherine again as usual, the phone started ringing inside the house. When I went in to answer the call, I could hear Jiharu's impatient voice.

"Fujiwara-sama, this is serious! Humans! Humans are coming here!"

——Humans. Hearing these words, I become so surprised that I accidentally dropped the phone.

Could it be that they've come to invade? Why? No, the humans should not know that there is a town here.

Then, why did they come to this land? They've already fled from this land because of that one earthquake. Why would they come to this place intentionally?

Did they come to chase the beastmen? Why now?

I couldn't reach a conclusion in my mind, so I asked. "How many people are there?"

"From what I heard, there are 3 people! They are asking for us to share some food!"

What, so there's only 3 people. In addition, they are only asking for food, eh? After hearing their purpose and numbers, I was relieved.

Insignificant.

I have heard about humans from each tribe's chief until now, and from what I've heard, as long as there are not many of them, the tribe will not lose. Even the small-sized Goblin tribe said so proudly, though everyone looked at them derisively.

Also, I need to pay attention to the existence of magic. I have heard stories about people who can use magic in the Goblin and the Kobold tribes. None of them were considered magicians with considerably high rank since their magic can't do much in battle, and using a bow and sword is much stronger.

Well, magic is more useful in daily life, like cooking with fire. Though the fire's strength is small, the fire was recognized to speed up the cooking process. In

fact, people who have fire magic usually aim to be a cook first. However, though there are many people who awaken to fire magic, they don't seem to easily become a cook though.

In the case of water, it will be used as filtered water. There are only a few types of water that humans can drink, so it’s common sense for humans to create water for drinking with magic. Then, like the medieval era Europe in my previous world, there’s no culture here that developed long-term water storage for brewing sake, or so I thought, but I guess the humans here also drink sake heartily. Maybe they‘ve already secured their drinking water supplies, which is why they can drink as much sake as they want.

[TL: all the liquor written in this series was written with kanji of sake 酒, it can mean Japanese Sake or just alcohol. So I will use sake from now on. I didn’t know if the Liquor industry in european need to have certain kind of water to be used to made their Liquor but, sake need a certain water to be used to maintain their flavor, that is why major sake production in japan will invest some of their money to maintain their water spring to be clear from any pollution]

If it's light, it's a light source. But, light magic is rare, and the one that awakens to this magic will usually be promised fame, and work for the Royal Family or high-ranking aristocrats as light technicians.

There are also earth and wood that’s usually used for crop development, and metal is for smithing, and so on.

How should I say it… It feels like a story from dreams. It made my heart throb like the time when I was choosing the ability cards.

But well, if I think about it carefully, it’s not a story that I can’t understand. For example, assuming that I was conjuring fire, the speed and distance when I imagine it... It's unlikely that it can beat bows. But, it’s alright if used at point blank distances.

There were also high magicians on the cards with [Big] and [Extra Big] tacked on. I was interested in how big the difference was, but when I asked the chiefs of Goblin and Kobold tribes, neither of them knew.

Getting back on topic about the three humans… I wonder if the three humans are soldiers, or where they come from. In any case, if their purpose is only food,

then we don't need to be hostile, even if they happen to be ridiculously strong or something.

“First of all, you need to prevent a fight from starting. I will go immediately after I get ready.” I instructed and hung up.

After I was fully armed, I got onto Catherine and went to the site.

“I am relying on you, Catherine!” I told her.

“GUEEEEEE!” Catherine began trotting furiously after crying out.

Although the speed was quite fast, this wasn't her best speed. According to the book written about camel ecology, camels seem to be able to run at about 60 km/hour.

Camels sure is amazing.

We move quickly through the main street. There is not even a shadow of peole here. In no time, I arrived at the town's outskirts, and a crowd of several hundreds of people were already there.

"It's Fujiwara-sama!" One of them noticed my presence.

Then, everyone stirred and turned to face me.

"Please make way." I requested.

When I said that, the road opened like the Red Sea before Moses.

Three human males could be seen ahead. One was a tall adult male with blonde hair wearing refined clothes. As for the other two, they are still young, and their clothes aren't as refined as that adult's.

These three people were trembling. At that moment, it was decided that they, who were humans, were weak and posed no threat.

I thought it was natural for them to be afraid since they are weak. If I was put in their shoes, I would also be trembling like them.

"I-If you put your hands on us, the Sandra Kingdom will not remain silent!" The adult shouted at me.

This looks more like a bluff than a threat. Using a huge country as a shield, he planned to establish his position.

“What did you come here for?” I ignored his threat.

“I-It's for academic research! It's not for something suspicious!” He answered defensively.

“What investigation?” I pressed.

“I am a geographer, so of course it’s to investigate this unknown land!” He declared.

“Then, why are you in such a condition? There is no reason for you to come here without food.” I commented.

“We were attacked by lynxes! We also lost our horses, and just barely escaped here! The food was still loaded in carriage!”

Lynxes are similar to leopards. They appear near this area frequently. They have been targeting the farmers and the camels that were grazing on the land, and subjection corps have been sent out several times already.

I see. I can roughly understand from their story. Then, in that case.

“It is your own fault.” The words were said in low voice.

The crowd murmured about their hate towards humans.

“You should just die.”

“This is the retribution for driving us out.”

With that as a trigger, the people started to jeer in low voices.

And, a certain man from bird tribe said. “Fujiwara-sama, let’s kill them.”

The tone of his voice made me tremble. Those scholars become frightened as well.

“What’s the reason for us to kill them?” I asked.

“If we leave them alive and allow them to return, the human army will also

come here.” A Kobold answered my question.

—— The human army will come to attack, huh?

This certainly isn’t an impossible thing. This is a town formed by beastmen who were driven out by the humans. If various tribes of beastmen live together, they will become hostile towards humans easily, so it is not strange for them to feel a sense of danger.

But....

“I won’t do that.” I announced.

“..! Why?!” The Kobold raised his voice.

“That is because they didn’t commit any evil deeds.” I stated.

“However, human countries drove us away! Every country does that without exception!” He protested.

That’s certainly true. The risk of letting them go, or taking advantage of them, and the way human beings treat beastmen… Those may be the real reasons why they won't give exceptions. So, the suggestion of that Kobold wasn’t wrong.

However, as expected, I will not have a good night’s sleep if I let them die. For example, if they tried to harm me, I will be able to pull the trigger of the gun without care. But, they haven’t done anything wrong in front of me yet.

Sure, their country did many evil deeds to the beastmen. But, I don't want to think that a country and its people are the same. Although men do make up a country, one person's crimes should not be considered as the whole country's crimes.

The morals of the Japanese is already ingrained deep inside me. Even if I forget about my previous world from now on, I think I wouldn't want to forget about my morals.

"Still… Still. As the head of this town, I order you. You must not harm them." I commanded.

When I announced my final decision, everyone could only accept it reluctantly.

Chapter 019 - Human ②

First, I dismissed the beastmen that were gathered here.

Chief Jiharu was worried about me being alone with the humans, so he insisted to stay until the end, but I said that I have my ways of self defense and sent him back.

So right now, there were only the three humans and me at the north gate.

Cough

I coughed without any meaning.

However, even though I didn’t do anything, they became scared. In their eyes,

I, who was looking down at them on Catherine, was a very strong beastman. If I don't get rid of their fear, we might not be able to talk calmly.

That’s why I removed the helmet, goggles, and face mask.

“A... Aahh..!” The blond man’s voice trembled with delight.

The eyes of the other two became round with surprise and delight.

“A-Are you a human!?” The blond man asked excitedly.

“Yes. My name is Fujiwara. I am the head of this town.” I replied.

“Aah... It feels like the rain after a drought..!” The tall blond man clapped his hands together and prayed to the heavens. The other two people had glowing

faces too.

“And you are..?” I asked.

“Ah, how impolite of me. My name is Frost, a geographic researcher from the Sandra Kingdom.” He stated. “These two are my apprentices... Hey, introduce yourselves.”

The other two introduce themselves to me.

I nod in return.

“Now then... Even if I give you food here, you will just be attacked by lynxes again on your way back.” I explained.

“Uurgh... That’s true.” Frost scowled.

“Did you come here unarmed?” I questioned.

Upon hearing this question, the apprentices’ faces became red.

“The two of them can use the bow, however, we were attacked suddenly. So, all we could do was escape while leaving the bows in the carriage. Augh, so embarrassing...” Frost bashfully confessed about what had happened.

He doesn’t seem to blame his apprentices… Frost really has a big heart, huh?

“Anyway, you must be tired. How about you rest up at this town first? I will escort you to a place without lynxes later. Naturally, I will give you food too.” I told them of my plans.

“Ooh! I am thankful for that.” Frost smiled widely.

There is no way I can let them die at a place where I can see. But, I don’t intend to give it to them free of charge.

First, I will squeeze information out of them. Then, as a token of friendship, I will make them swear to not tell anyone about this place. I need to protect this place by all means.

In case something bad happens to these humans... I need to prepare for it.

“This is an important point if you want to enter the town. I think you already know that the residents of this town aren’t humans.They are beastmen who were driven out of their lands by humans. Please DO NOT provoke them. If anything happens to you because of that, I will not take any responsibility for it.” I instructed them sternly.

“I... I understand... Are you guys also alright with that..?” Frost turned to ask his apprentices.

“Y-Yes.” One of them nodded.

“I...I understand.” The other nodded as well.

“Then, please follow me.” I requested.

Thus, I led the three of them into the town.

As we went past the gate, their gazes wandering all over, perhaps because their curiosities were provoked by the Japanese-styled townscape.

After a while, we finally arrived at the inn which was usually closed.

I opened the door and entered the building.

“Please enter. Please take off your shoes as well.” I told them.

This place was cleaned with the help of the townspeople once a month, so the inside was relatively clean. However, there was still a little bit dust at the entrance.

I opened the windows one by one to let the sunlight pour inside. Then, I guided them to one of the guest rooms. There was nothing inside besides the tatami mats and a desk.

“Please, sit down.” I gestured.

“Th-Then…” Frost did so nervously.

When he sat down, his apprentices followed suit. They seemed curious about the tatami mat as they used their hands to touch it.

“I was intending to prepare a drink, but perhaps you’ll prefer a meal more?” I offered.

Then, a growling sound was emitted from the stomach of one apprentice.

“I will bring the meal then.” I stated evenly.

“Ah, because my apprentices can use water magic, can you just give us some glasses? We’re not sure if the water from this place will suit us or not, so...” Frost requested uneasily.

“Alright, I will do that then.” I nodded.

“I apologise for our selfishness.” He frowned.

“No, that’s alright. It’s natural.” I assured them.

I left the room and summoned Town Data as I walked to the first floor.

Now then… What should I give them? If I provide a dish using ingredients that they don’t know of, it might be troublesome if they became interested in this place. It's better to provide them with dishes made from cheaper and more common ingredients if possible.

As expected, it should be bread. I heard that the humans of this world usually eat bread. However, I need to pay attention to the quality of the bread. Since the bread in my original world was invented in modern time, there is a

possibility that that kind of bread has not been invented here yet. In that case, it will be troublesome if they tried to ask about the recipe. Would it much better to dish out naan, a type of flatbread that is easy to make to them?

I operated the screen and purchased naan, boiled eggs, and salt.

This should be good. I will serve them vegetables for dinner. I will ask the goblin and kobold tribes what humans eat before I take it out to them later. After waiting for some time for the dishes to cook, I brought the dishes to their room.

Afterwards, I explained to them about how to use the toilet and heat up the bath water, prepared a change of clothes, and consoled them as much as possible.

Everything was done by me alone. It might be my first labour since I arrived in this world.

After they cleaned up, we had a late dinner. Then, I served meat, vegetables, as well as liquor for dinner.

After dinner.

“Ah, thank you very much for saving us today.” Frost smiled at me as he held a cup of sake in his hand.

His apprentices weren’t present in this room. It seemed like they felt uncomfortable to be in the same room as their teacher, so I prepared another room for them.

“No, please don’t mind it.” I assured him.

“Still, this town is amazing. I have never seen this kind of unique architecture before. It feels so refined and impressive! Was all of this built by you?” He asked.

“Yes. All of the construction techniques were from me.” I lied with a poker face.

To the real inventors, I am truly sorry.

“I see... To have such a deep insight... I can understand now why the beastmen obeyed your orders.” Frost nodded. “As expected of this world’s wisdom. The intelligent people always stand at the top. Even in a country, they will be able to lead people at ease. Don’t you think so?”

I see. Being intelligent is something to be proud of here. I can understand if there is a such place. However, I am not really that good at using my head.

But, I don’t correct Frost.

“That’s right. If I may add on, it should be wisdom and sincerity. If they have these two, ordinary people will be able to find happiness.” I stated.

“Oooh, as expected! You are an intelligent person!” Frost gushed.

For some reason, I was being praised.

“No, I can’t match a scholar like you.” I smiled back politely.

“You are just too modest.” He grinned.

While praising me, Frost held out the brown sake bottle to me, wanting to pour me a drink. When I lifted my empty sake cup to receive it, I also grabbed another sake bottle and offered it to him.

“By the way, did you come to investigate the geography here because of the earthquake, or did you come here to investigate the minerals and vegetation around here?” I asked.

“That reminds me, I haven’t talked about the detailed objective of our trip.” He looked embarrassed for a moment. “Do you know if there is a desert south of here?”

“Yes, of course I know about it since I live here.” I replied.

“Then, what about what’s in there?” He asked.

“I don’t know, unfortunately...” I shook my head.

“We came here to check what’s in there!” Frost suddenly snorted in

excitement.

“However, since there is only desert there, nothing might be there.” I cautioned.

“That may be so, but, there is still a possibility that something is there! It’s important for me to see it with my own eyes!” He shouted enthusiastically.

“I see. Certainly, it is as you’ve said.” I nodded.

Not only is he smart, but his adventurer’s spirit is also praiseworthy.

“However, it will be dangerous, as expected. I don’t think the horses from the north can tolerate the heat from desert. The horses’ hooves will sink into the sand, which will sap their stamina.” I mused aloud. “Wait, you said that you used a horse carriage right? If you used it in the desert, will not it feel like riding in the swamp?”

“Uuu... Actually, I have never seen a desert before. That’s why I didn’t know it was filled with sand all these years. That’s why I didn’t know whether the earth was hard or soft...” Frost’s voice gradually became softer and softer, probably because he was ashamed with himself.

“Is that so? Well, anyway, I’m glad you’re safe. Here you go.” I poured him some sake.

“Then please excuse me.” Frost drank the sake immediately.

Immediately after this, I receive another pour of sake from him too.

Now then, we should talk about the main subject now.

“How’s your city doing right now?” I tried to ask about the Sandra Kingdom ambiguously.

Since we have a lot of beastmen here,he might become suspicious if I ask straight out. Therefore, I used a vague word like city. I intended to expand the talk from here.

“The city? Aah, Sandra Kingdom, huh? To be honest, it is not good or bad.” He sighed.

Bingo. Frost didn’t even mind about my use of the word ‘city’. He just concluded that city meant Sandra Kingdom itself.

“Not good or bad? For me who is living in the countryside, it will be quite troubling to make something of that.” I pretended to be confused.

“The king is indecisive and ignorant of politics. When the church forbid war,

peace gradually came. But, because he is being misled by traitorous ministers, the gold inside the treasure doesn't increase." Frost sighed again. "Because the misgovernment isn't too extreme, as long as there is no big disaster, the people will not starve. That is why I can't say whether it's good or bad."

The church was of the Rashia religion, the number one religion in this continent. The goblin and kobold tribes said that humans were the first believers of this religion.

"Didn't you say that they forbid war? I heard that the beastmen were being driven out by humans. Does it not apply to the beastmen?" I asked.

One of Frost's eyebrows twitched.

"I am sorry. I am ignorant about human society for a long time because I've lived in this place for years, so..." I hastily added.

This type of reply shouldn’t be strange, I hope.

Frost seemed to understand, and he began to speak carefully.

“The church forbid war between nations. No matter what the reason was, the person who started the war will be excommunicated. Until now, every country was in a war, so they tried to find an advantage outside all the time. However since they can’t do that anymore, their attention turn inwards.” He paused for a moment. “There was some land where the beastmen lived. Because it was small, it should have been overlooked. Even though it was small, but, if many were to be collected, it will become a lot. It was something like that.”

After he finished, Frost placed his cup on the desk with loud clink. His cheeks were rosy, but his eyes seemed to be peeking at me.

“I understand your real intentions. I would be worried about this town too.”

It was a bullseye. I was shaken, for him to be able to guess my real intention with only two question… But, I still smiled while grasping the sake cup with one hand.

“I can guess why you were building a town in this place, and why you were accompanied by beastmen. ...Do you want to hear about it?” He asked.

“Please.” I nodded.

“You sympathized with the beastmen who starved and have lost a place to go to. Isn’t that why you made a town for beastmen? You said the things necessary for a person to govern were wisdom and sincerity. Weren’t you talking about yourself?” Frost laid everything out.

No, you’re wrong. The reason why I made this town was for me until the end. But, because of that, I was able to rescue the beastmen. I was honestly happy about it.

Bond. In my original world, this word was a cliche that was used at every opportunity, but in this world, I was able to feel the bond with the beastmen in this town.

Of course with Catherine, we are already connected by a bond that was like a chain that can never been untied any more.

“That’s right. I made this town for the beastmen. At this place where humans can’t live, our only wish is to live quietly. Therefore, even if you return to your country, can you please not tell anyone about this place?” I used pleading words and lowered my head to him.

“Please stop this. If you want to silence us, you can just kill us and be done with it.

However, you didn’t do that. So, why should we ignore your request?” He quickly stopped me.

Afterwards, because Frost said I that I could ask about anything, I asked about

this world without restraint. First, I asked about the Sandra Kingdom. Then, I brought out a piece of scrap cloth to draw a map of this world, and learn about the situation of this world.

We continued to talk until late into the night. He seemed eager to tell me more and more about the world.

When day broke, Frost was still asleep, so they decided to stay for one more day, and so, we talked again from noon till night.

Then, on the third day since Frost and his apprentices had arrived.

“Well then, I will entrust the city to you, Chief Jiharu.” I told him solemnly.

“Yes, leave it to me.” He replied seriously.

I leave the town to Chief Jiharu, and went to send off Frost and his apprentices. Originally the plan was to part ways after we went past the territory of the lynxes, but we didn't since they also taught us about the other side with good intentions too. That was why I decided to escort Frost and his apprentices to the vicinity of the human village.

Even though it was short, Frost was my teacher, and I, his student.

At the same time, the escort also included four people from the wolf tribe. All of them were riding camels.

There were five camels, including Catherine. Three of the camels were used by Frost and his apprentices, while the people from the wolf tribe rode the camels in pairs.

Humans and wolfmen…

It felt awkward at the beginning, but after they got used to each other, it didn’t bother anyone anymore. Also, I’ve told the wolfmen beforehand that the humans were guests.

In the middle of journey, the lynxes approached the group after seeing that there were only a few of people in the group. But, they were easily killed by the wolfmen with bows.

On the ninth day of the journey, we parted ways with Frost and his apprentices and returned to the town.

It was on the sixteenth day after we left the town that we safely returned to the town once more.

On our way back, the bodies of the lynxes disappeared one by one.

Chapter 020 - Athletic Meet

“Fuu...” I sighed.

The first thing I did after returning from the long trip was to take a bath before falling onto my bed from the side.

“So soft...” I mumbled.

Although sleeping outside wasn't that bad, the bed inside the house was still the best.

“Yotto.” I huffed.

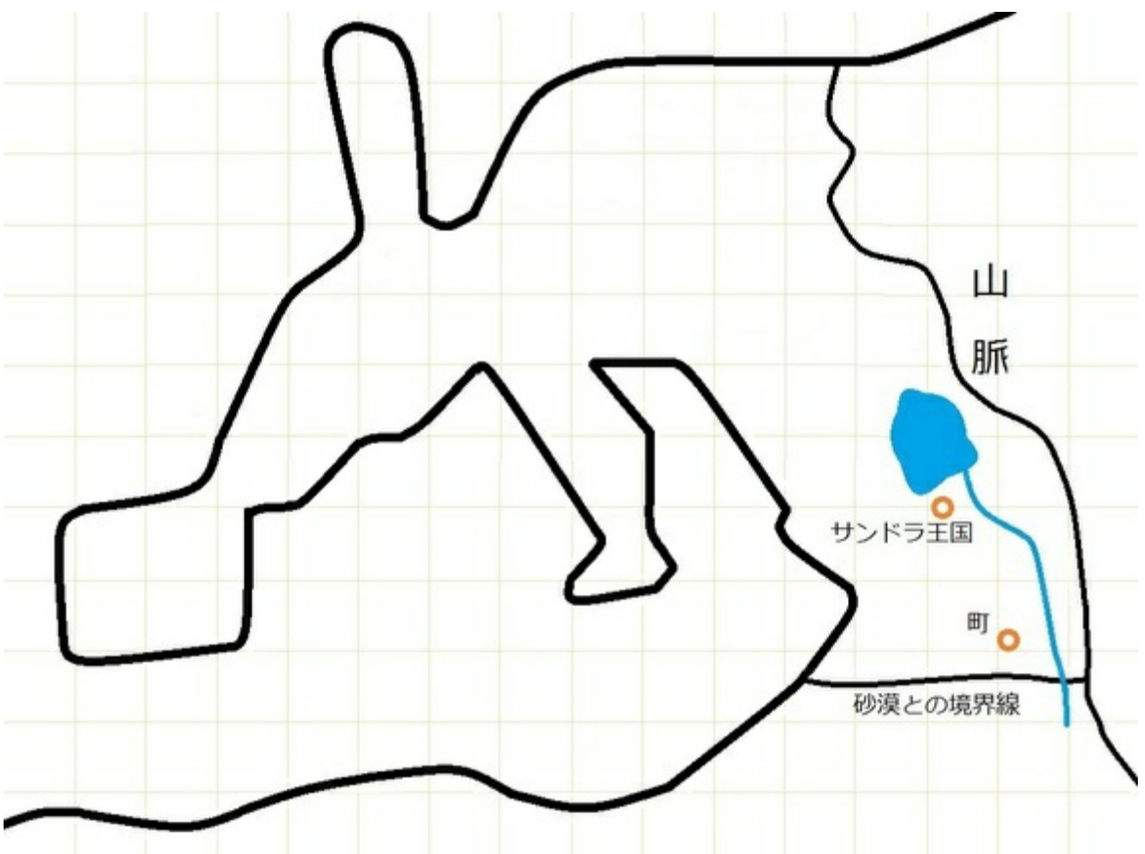
While hanging down at the lower part of the bed, I rolled over and laid on my back.

The light from the ceiling is dazzling. While squinting my eyes, I was able to rest since things ended up without any problems.

When I go on a long journey, my only concern was about leaving the town for some days. However, there were no problems, and the town was going on like usual when I returned.

I closed my eyes and tried to sleep, but, I couldn’t sleep.

Ah, I can’t help it... I get up and picked up the piece of cloth on the desk. The map of this continent was drawn on it.



[TL:

山脈 = mountain range

砂漠との境界線 ＝ boundary line to the Desert

サンドラ王国が = Sandra Kingdom

町 = town]

When I look at it like this, I think it really looks like Europe. The continent is called Dragon’s Jaw (Ryu no Ago). Beyond mountain range on the east is a land of intense cold that has never been explored by humans before. According to the rumours, it was said that a Demon King is living there.

At the south is a desert. It’s also a land where mankind haven’t set their foot on yet.

Also, since there were demons living inside the sea, navigation techniques were still uninvented.

Who knows if there was an existence like the African Continent in my original world since the sand was occasionally being carried with South wind.

And there is the Sandra Kingdom to the north of this town. Frost said that Sandra kingdom's military have never come to this land before. Although that won't remain so as long as the peace of human society still continue as it is, but that is unlikely.

‘The church forbade the waging of wars between nations, but, it didn’t say anything about internal fighting. There are plenty of internal disturbances like territorial disputes, civil war, or fighting over inheritances.

If the scheme from other countries were mixed in here, a fight would happen inside the country eventually, and it will eventually lead to a war between nations.

Church's edict? Fufu... As long as a great amount of money and a trigger are involved, war will always happen. After all, the peace was only the preparatory period for next war.

If what Frost said is true, then this land can continue to enjoy peace as it is. But, I am not that immature to trust everything he said. I should assume the worst...

Yeah.

When Frost and his company reveal this town's existence, the Sandra Kingdom will send its military force to this land.

A few days later...

I noticed a small incident in the town. The townspeople still made contact with me as if nothing had changed at the first glance, but I can feel that the air was a little bit different from before.

However, I know the cause was that I helped Frost who was a human. Because I sided with humans, it gave birth to dissatisfaction among them.

But, it didn’t happen for the wolf tribe who had been with me since the beginning. Because we’ve spent a long time together, we had a deep bond. In that case, the relationship with other races will also be repaired with the passage of time.

But, no matter how I think about it, I am a fool.

I am a human, the same race as the ones who took the home of the beastmen. That's why, it wouldn't be strange if the dissatisfaction of the beastmen changed into doubt, which is why I don't intend to leave their dissatisfaction alone.

"So, let's organize an athletic meet!" I declared.

"An athletic... Meet, is it?" The man hummed.

I talked about my plans at Jiharu's house of while beating him in reversi as the clacking of the pieces meeting the board echoed in the room.

The festival will be called the Athletic Meet. The winner will be rewarded with glory and sake. In addition, I will treat everyone to sake as well.

"Yes, because we compete over individual technique and ability, the one who's in first place will be rewarded with a gift." I explained.

It was like a festival. However, if we hold just a banquet like usual, the

excitement won't be enough. Therefore, I let them compete with each other to dissipate their dissatisfaction.

“I see. So, what are we competing in?” Jiharu asked.

“Running, archery, javelin throwing, camel racing, and maybe reversi too.” I replied.

The point was to excite everyone, but the next obstacle was about the Goblin and Kobold tribes who had weaker physical strength. They will never have a winning chance if they compete in physical ability only.

However, for the camel racing, Catherine and I will naturally win the championship. Therefore, I prepared the reversi section.

Currently, reversi is the best entertainment in town. Also, it will be advantageous for the Goblin and Kobold tribes who were more intelligent. Unlike other board games, it doesn’t take too much time too. It would be over in no time while the rest compete in the sporting events.

“Understood. I will make some adjustments as well. But, if everyone were to take charge of the work, that will leave some people who will be unable to participate.” Jiharu raised a good point.

“Yeah. I will send some sake as a reward for those people as well.” I decided.

The universal language of the world is gold, but it is sake in this town.

Two days later...

《With this, the first event of the Athletic Meet will start!》 While standing on the top of a stand, I used the loudspeaker to conduct the opening ceremony of the Athletic Meet.

Great shouts of joy broke out almost immediately. Everyone went to have a drink, and were already getting excited.

I was the host while several wolfmen will be acting as assistants in Athletic Meet.

The first competition was short distance running, also known as sprinting.

The preliminary sprint consisted of 3 races. Each tribe will pick 3 people, and each participant can only participate in 1 race. By the way, the participants from the Goblin tribe abstained from all the sporting events, but they surrounded the stage for reversi, which had a desk and a chair at the corner.

“On your mark, get set...” I announced.

After a shout, I pulled the trigger of the handgun that I had pointed to the sky. Then, an earsplitting, intense sound echoed.

Of course, I didn’t actually shoot any bullets. It was a blank round. However, even with a blank round, if it was shot at close range, it still had enough power to make a hole in a steel can easily, so I need to be careful when using it.

At the sound of the gunshot, the participants lined up behind the line started to run.

As expected they are fast. It's my personal opinion, but I think they even surpassed Olympic-level athletes.

Roars of encouragement erupted from the audience as the players went over the goal one by one. The first place was someone from the Leopard tribe, the second place was someone from the wolf tribe, and in third place was the representative of the deer tribe These 3 people qualified for the next stage.

“Uoooooo!” The leopardman who took first place raised his fist over his head and roared.

The people from his tribe who were sitting at the side also gave thunderous shouts of joy for their tribesman who won.

After that, the second preliminary round also concluded safely, and next was the third round.

Suddenly, a person whom I recognized appeared on the starting line as a participant. It was Mira from the Wolf tribe who had left town alone from before.

Our gazes met for an instant, and she turned her face abruptly. Maybe she still hates me...

“On your marks, get set...” I announced.

The participants waited for the signal to start as they got into position. An explosive bang echoed throughout the area, and at the same time, the participants ran towards the goal wholeheartedly.

For some reason, I supported Mira inside my mind. However—

“Aaah...” I unconsciously let out a disappointed sigh.

Because Mira was fourth, and was eliminated during the preliminary rounds.

There were tears of frustration at the edges Mira’s eyes.

I wanted her to win because I had a deeper relationship with her than others, but reality was harsh.

Well, she should work harder next time, was what I told myself as I pulled myself together and moved onto the finals.

《Now’s the time for the finals! These are the nine who still remain so far! As mentioned previously, the Leopard tribe has 3 people taking first place in the preliminaries! How overwhelming! Next are three people from Deer tribe! Can they defeat the Leopard tribe in the finals?! Then, there are 2 people from the Wolf tribe and one from the Cat tribe! The final contestants are these nine people! All participants, please get behind the starting line!》 I delcared.

The participants took their positions in succession. I handed the loudspeaker to the wolfman who waited beside me. Then, I pointed the gun at the sky.

“On your marks, get set...” I shouted.

The audience fell silent at the same time, and the surrounding areas were wrapped in silence. And then, a loud bang violently tore through the silence. Loud cheers then poured out of the audience like a broken dam.

All the participants began running along their lanes respectively. Everyone moved their hands and feet furiously as they tried to move even a little bit more in that short time.

The result was that the first and second places were claimed by the Leopard tribe. As for the 3rd place... I wonder if it'll be the leopardman or the one from the Deer tribe since from my position, they seemed to be arriving at the same time. According to the wolfmen who were holding the goal sash, in 3rd place was... The leopardman. The man from the Deer tribe had regrettably lost and placed fourth, but I'd still like to applaud him.

Still, even though it was the finals, it seemed like the correct answer was to award the winning prize down to the fourth place because it will look pathetic if all three rewards were swept up by people from the same race.

《The sprinting event ended with the overwhelming victory of the Leopard tribe! The contestant of the Deer tribe fought hard too, but wasn't able to beat them!》 I commentated.

"UUUOOOOO!!!" Triumphant shouts that felt like earthquakes arose from the Leopard tribe.

《Because the awards ceremony will take place at the end of the event, can the participants who have just ran please watch the game till the end at your seats? Now then, let's move on to the next event! The next event is... Archery! All participants, please gather!》 I announced.

The venue was roiling with cheers for the participants once more. The competition advanced smoothly like this.

Time passed, before long, all the events had ended.

The Bird tribe won the archery event because of their superior eyesight, and as for the javelin throwing event, it was won by the people from the Boar tribe who were proud of their strength. As for reversi, a boy from the Wolf tribe defeated the Kobold and Goblin tribes, and won the championship. It was the same boy who defeated me two years ago.

His body had grown so much bigger from farm work that I almost didn't recognize him. However, his intelligence didn't seem to have changed from that time.

Also, the combination of Catherine and I was overwhelming at camel racing. As expected of my wife.

When she had finished racing, Catherine stuffed her mouth with the weeds that were nearby, and began munching. How cute.

It could be said that the Athletic Meet produced a tremendous result. The people who didn't get good results drank sake to soothe themselves. As for the awards ceremony…

All the participants ranked 1st to 4th from each competition stood proudly before me.

The people in first place were awarded a pendant, wine, and Japanese sake. Those in second and third places were awarded wine and Japanese sake while those in fourth place were awarded with watermelons and Japanese sake.

Cross leather chain: 50,000 yen (actual price 500 yen)

700 mls of red wine: 68,000 yen (actual price 680 yen)

1 sho of high class Japanese sake: 4000 yen.

Watermelon: 700 yen.

[TL: 1 sho is 1.8 liter]

A cheap pendant… Even though it was something insignificant in the previous world, it was considered valuable in this world.

As the pendants were hung on the necks of the participants, their tribesmen erupted with cheers immediately.

“Well done!”

“You are our pride!”

Praise flew from every corner of the event.

“Congratulations. That was some splendid archery skills.” I commented.

Upon hearing me say so, the young man from the Bird tribe burst into tears.

“T-Thank you very much..!” He was deeply moved by my simple words.

“Well then, give your friends a wave!” I urged.

“Yes!”

With this, the first Athletic Meet came to a successful end.

Afterwards, the Athletic Meet was still discussed by everyone even after a week had passed, and they completely forget about the humans who had arrived and left not long ago.

Chapter 021 - Knight

The warm spring was over, and the scorching hot summer had arrived. This sizzling hot summer was much better than the humid summers of Japan. However, because of the temperature was higher than Japan's summers, you'll need to be careful of dehydration.

Then, summer passed and it was now autumn. The temperature had fallen, and the air felt more pleasant. It was also the rainy season, so rain poured down occasionally and soaked the dried up land.

Even though winter was coming soon, weeds were still growing sparsely on the land.

On one day particular day...

"Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!" A loud sound suddenly resounded throughout the town.

“What is it?!” I woke up hurriedly from my carefree afternoon nap which I had taken with my back against Catherine.

Chaos happened within just a moment, but my mind understood the situation immediately.

The gong which I had installed on top of the town’s stone walls was struck many times. The gong was hit once to inform everyone of the time, but if it was hit numerous times, then...

“Fujiwara-sama! Fujiwara-sama!” Along with the voice of someone yelling was the sound of the gate being rapped on multiple times.

The voice didn’t seem to belong to Jiharu, but another person instead. In other words, it was a situation of great emergency, so much so that Jiharu had to send someone over to pass the message rather than come personally.

Even the usually laidback Catherine had lifted her neck upon sensing the unusual crisis.

“What happened?!” I demanded.

I had a premonition, but I tried to shake off that idea as I questioned the person beyond the gate.

“It’s the humans! There’s a human army up north!” The person reported quickly.

When I heard this, I gritted my teeth and clenched my fists. What I was afraid of had occurred.

A human army. In other words, the armed forces of the Kingdom of Sandra have finally arrived.

“What’s their position?!” I pressed.

“It was reported that they saw a cloud of dust in the distance from the hill!” The person replied.

Since Frost left, I had come up with the worst case scenario, and made preparations for it, such as having a watchtower for surveillance built on the hill several kilometers up north.

“Get everyone to evacuate into the town! I will go to the north gate immediately!” I ordered roughly.

I don’t have the time to afford to use polite speech anymore.

I quickly changed into my combat uniform, and purchased bows and arrows which I placed on the truck’s carrier. Once that was done, I climbed into the truck seat and left for the north gate.

Even from afar, I could see the residents of the town gathering one after another at the north gate. However, theirs numbers were far from the entire population.

“Make way!” Someone helpfully announced.

The truck advanced through the path formed by the crowd around the north gate.

“Ooh, it is a truck!”

“As long as we have Fujiwara-sama’s truck, then the humans...”

The people murmured amongst themselves as they gazed at the vehicle.

The truck that I drove had become some sort of symbol to them. When they first arrived, they feared this truck. They were afraid of such a huge beast, and had worshipped it. That was the reason why the townspeople felt a sense of security when they saw the figure of the truck.

After I parked the truck behind the north gate, I alighted from it and opened the carrier.

“There are bows and arrows here! Those who can use them should take

them!”

Most of them were people who had lived in a world unrelated to farming. Except for the Goblin tribe who mainly lived off trading with humans, using a bow was as easy as a handshake to everyone else .

“The Wolf tribe and I will be by the north gate! The Bird tribe, the Leopard tribe, the Deer tribe, and the Kobold tribe should station themselves at the west gate! The east gate will be guarded by the Boar tribe, the Cat tribe and the Raccoon tribe while the Goblin tribe will be in charge of the supplies! Those who have fast feet should act as messengers! As soon as the camels enter the town with all residents, close the gate! Afterwards, nobody should move until I give further orders!” I instructed everyone without hesitation.

Everyone moved according to my orders without delay since I’ve already trained them during summer. That was why we could move around without any big confusion.

I climbed up the stone wall. In the distance, a thin cloud of rising dust could be seen. Their marching speed was faster than my expectations. Even through the binoculars, it didn’t differ much from looking at them with naked eyes. At most, the cloud of dust just looked a little bigger.

“Is there anyone here who can estimate how many people can create a cloud of dust of that size?” I asked.

“About 300 to 500 cavalrymen!” Someone from the Wolf tribe answered the question immediately.

“300 to 500 cavalrymen, huh...” I muttered while looking at the backpack that I’ve put at the side.

It was packed with all the bullets that I had in my possession.

Before long, the news of all the tribesmen safely entering the town arrived one after another from each of the gates. It was the same with the Wolf tribe too, and Jiharu had arrived next to me.

Then, the enemy force arrived. From a distance of about 300 meters away, the enemy cavalry was lined up intimidatingly. They numbered around 500. All of them wore silver armors that shone brilliantly. The figures of 500 cavalrymen forming a line looked spectacular, just like in the movies.

Then, one man stepped forward from their ranks. With that, some of the wolfmen pulled their bows to the limit, already preparing to shoot him.

“Wait! Don’t shoot before I give any orders!” I yelled quickly.

The Wolf tribe was the tribe which I had associated with longest. That was why I had them here, since we could support each other the best.

“We are the Red Dragon Knights from the Kingdom of Sandra! This land belongs to the kingdom! Thus, the town built on this land belongs to the kingdom as well! Surrender the town now!” The man shouted haughtily, completely without shame.

It was an arrogant demand which was the very proof that they looked down on us.

Of course, I couldn’t possibly accept such a demand. This land and the town

were mine.

“You don’t live on this land, but we do! Therefore, this land is ours! This town was built by us! Therefore this town is ours too!” I hollered as loudly as I could.

I don’t have any intentions of handing anything over. Following me, the Wolf tribe also shouted at the enemy.

“That’s right!”

“Get out!”

“Can’t you see that the strongest knights of the Kingdom of Sandra, the Red Dragon Knights, are before you?! If you won’t surrender, we will annihilate all of you!” The man yelled, utterly furious.

But, my response did not change.

“I will say it again no matter how many times I have to repeat myself! This land is where we live! Leave immediately!” I shouted.

“You will regret this!” The man roared in anger.

Seeing that his demand wasn’t fulfilled, he signalled the cavalry and left. As soon as he did, the Wolf tribe became noisy.

“Oi, that’s!?”

“They... They are still there!”

The cause of the clamouring was off in the distance.

“Fu-Fujiwara-sama! A cloud of dust can be seen behind them! The numbers are too many to be counted! Those are not supply troops! They’re reinforcements!” Jiharu reported while trembling in fear.

In the distance, a cloud of dust was spread out, low at the sides.

‘Of course.’ I thought to myself.

If Frost had told them, then the enemy would know that this town was surrounded by a stone wall. They wouldn’t be able to siege the place with just the cavalry. Perhaps those were part of the infantry.

“Please calm down. It’s not the time to panic yet.” I stated coolly.

I calmed myself down first. First, I need to judge the situation calmly.

That man from a while ago called his corps the Red Dragon Knights. If I were to trust the story that Frost had told me, there are 4 powerful Knight Orders in the Kingdom of Sandra - the Red Dragons, Azure Dragons, Yellow Dragons, and Green Dragons. The Knight Orders seemed to have been named after the 4 ancient dragons, and the Red Dragon Knights was one of them.

It was a Knight Order of venerable origins, so the person to lead them must be of an irreplaceable rank amongst the nobility. That one general who commands over the entire Knight Order... He must be somewhere within the troops.

Moreover, the cavalry troops that were sent here before must have only experienced chasing the beastmen tribes away without fighting. They must have thought that as long as they lined up and barked out demands, things would resolve itself, and the beastmen would surrender automatically. So, the person leading these troops may have wanted to gain an easy merit for themselves.

However, did they ever think that this time, things would end without having to fight as well?

Of course, there is no way I would allow it. But, I wanted to avoid a siege war as much as possible. Then, the only way out was to settle things before the infantry arrives.

I have decided on what steps I have to take. No, it has long been decided. Even though there was a slight difference, the general order of actions are still within my plans.

I unfastened the strap of the rifle from my shoulder. However, my heart beat suddenly sped up.

The thing I will do now. It is obviously an act of murder. When I thought so, a cold shiver ran up my spine. It felt something like being made to stand on high grounds without a proper foothold or lifeline. Even now, my hands and feet feel like they're trembling hard.

But, I need to do it. I had thought that such a time will come one day. The moment of me killing someone, I've already simulated it in my mind many times.

I took a kneeling position to shoot.

I flicked the safety switch, and changed it to rapid fire mode. As for the target, I pointed it towards the man who had asked us to surrender. He had just returned to make a report. He would thus be heading to the place where the commander leading the Knight Order was stationed.

My eyes spotted the enemy general. He was the only young warrior who had taken off his helmet inside the formation. Knowing that the place was outside

the range of arrows, he stood as the vanguard of the troop.

I took aim, and pulled the trigger.

Tatan! Tatan! Two ear-numbing, continuous shots cut through the wasteland.

Along with it, the beastmen twitched in reflex.

It was possible to shoot rapid fire with this rifle, however I had a reason to shoot only twice. It was due to the recoil when I shot the gun which made the barrel swing upwards. If I only shot twice, it would result in less slippage, and still hit the target. However when a third bullet was shot, the barrel would be shaken way off upwards. So far, it had never hit the target when I practiced it. Therefore, I only shot twice.

But, the man who fell victim to the two bullets was the one standing next to the presumed general. The surrounding horses started neighing and bucking, and the cavalrymen panicked in the ensuing confusion.

After the recoil, I aimed at them again, and pulled the trigger again. The one who collapsed was yet another wrong target.

Whenever the sound echoed, someone fell down. The situation within the enemy ranks degenerated as terror spiked. Furthermore, at the echo of the fourth explosive sound, the enemy general was struck down.

But, it was not the end yet. He might not have died yet. The sound of the rifle firing resounded another 6 times.

4 bullets pierced through the earth's surface, but the two remaining bullets caused flowers of blood to bloom from the enemy general's body.

Then, the enemy finally noticed. Everyone around the general became victims. Naturally, the soldiers started to distance themselves from the commander.

I put the rifle down and stood up to look at the enemy general through a pair of binoculars.

He didn’t seem even twitch at all, and his arms have been blown off too.

He was dead. I concluded so. A burning sensation was rising up from my stomach.

I forcefully gulped it down, and picked up my rifle again.

One person dismounted from his horse and approached the enemy general. I shot him without hesitation.

I could only feel coldness in my heart.

Since the enemy general had died, he could no longer return to his hometown. All that’s left was for his corpse to be abandoned here.

An unknown offensive ploy resulting in the cruel death of the enemy general. That was my strategy.

Tempting the enemies to retreat, and restraining their way of proceeding southwards afterwards was my first card. Of course, there were other cards up my sleeves as well.

Within my line of vision was another person approaching the enemy general again, so I shot him down.

Thus, the enemy cavalry finally retreated.

Chapter 022 - Victory

I breathed out audibly as I watched the cloud of dust that arose from the enemy's retreat.

A thunderous shout of victory then echoed from the surrounding areas.

"We repelled those humans!"

"This is the power of Fujiwara-sama!"

"We protected our town!"

Everyone from the Wolf tribe was delighted. It was a given since they have been treated badly and assaulted by human beings so far. That was why they were delighted when they saw the human army retreat hastily before their eyes.

The delight of the Wolf tribe had also caused something to change inside my

heart. Is this the effect of crowd psychology? The sense of guilt from killing people was eased, and the joy of being able to protect the town became stronger.

But, it's still too early to be careless. When the cavalry joins up with the infantry, what kind of action will they take? Of course, there is a possibility that they may invade again.

I stared at the cavalry's back intently.

Please just retreat with the army troops behind them as it is.

Such thoughts occupied my mind.

"What happened!?"

Due to the uproar at the north gate, the messengers dispatched from each of the other gates arrived to check on the situation. I sent the messengers back to convey the successful repelling of the enemy.

A short while later, earth shaking cheers erupted from both the west and east gates.

In the end, the cavalry merged into the army's rear and quietly left for the north. I've dispatched scouts to all directions in response, but not a single shadow of the enemy could be found.

I requested many people to keep watch, and finally dissolved the town's defensive measures.

Later, I ordered the beastmen to bury the corpses of the enemies scattered all over the land. Furthermore, I asked them to arrest that one soldier who was left crushed under a dead horse.

Before long, the day was over, and darkness fell. Fires were lit on the stone walls surrounding the town as the beastmen took turns to patrol throughout the night.

Later that night, I laid on my bed, staring at the flickering shadows on the ceiling.

Did the enemy forces really retreat back to their country just like that? If their retreat was just a pretense, they should be attempting a night raid tonight.

I couldn’t sleep. All these anxious worries gave me insomnia.

I collected myself and slipped out of bed. I didn’t change my clothes and was still wearing my battle suit, so after equipping myself, I left the house swiftly.

I was greeted with chill and the clear night sky filled with stars.

Because there were no clouds to trap the heat, it was much colder at night as compared to the day.

I boarded the truck and left through the gate of my home. The headlights illuminate the main streets of the dark town. Before long, I arrived at the north gate and alighted. As if they were lying in wait, they called out to me.

“Fujiwara-sama, do you need anything?”

That voice, it was Jiharu.

“I can’t sleep. What about you?” I asked wearily.

“I’ve come to check on the situation.” The chief stated.

Currently the ones guarding the north gate were the Wolf and the Raccoon tribes.

For a serious person like Chief Jiharu, I had guessed that he intended to spend a night atop the stone walls.

The two of us ascended the stairs, and gazed towards the north when we reached the top of the stone walls. Pale moonlight illuminated the dark land around us, but the area several hundred meters ahead was nothing but pitch black darkness.

Something that you can’t see is terrifying, because you can’t understand something that you can’t see. Perhaps, enemies would approach from that darkness. When I think so, I become anxious as expected.

On that day, I stayed up all night, staring at the dark world beyond the stone walls.

The next morning, I gave an order to search for the enemy again. However, the report that came back showed no signs of enemy. It seems like the enemy has really retreated.

Thus, peace was restored in the town once again.

Well, since the town became peaceful again, there was something new that needs to be added to the town.

After lunch, I headed for the inn.

Changing the subject, there is no prison in this town. Every tribe was split into their own lands inside the town, and a sort of fixed autonomy governs each individual tribe. Any conflicts that arose within the tribe will be resolved by the tribe themselves.

With regards to public security, my responsibility would be, at most, dealing with disputes between members of different tribes. Even then, such situations were mostly settled by talks between their respective chiefs.

Therefore, one of the inn's rooms that wasn't used became a substitute for a prison cell for the captive knight from yesterday. As for the guards, I left two wolfmen equipped with swords to stand in front of the room. By the way, the swords they had were stripped from enemy corpses from yesterday.

"I'm coming in." I called out in front of the closed door, but no reply came. However, I could hear some noises inside the tatami room.

I slid the door open. At the corner of the room was a young man with brown hair shrinking away in fright. Naturally, his armor and weapons had been confiscated, so what he currently wore consisted of a white top and bottoms that was worn under the armor.

“Wh-What is it?! Don’t even try to touch my finger, or the kingdom will not stay silent!” He shouted while trembling hard.

It was a line that I have heard from somewhere before.

“Ho? Do you mean that you are of a high position in the Kingdom of Sandra?” I asked mockingly.

“I...” The young man flinched at his own comment before gathering his thoughts for a little bit, and opened his mouth again. “Th-That’s right! I am the legitimate child of the Earl Baiden Haruku, Romatto Baiden Haruku! If you send me back to my country, you will receive a lot of money! That’s why you must send me back to my country!”

The attitude of this youth, Romatto, was rather defiant.

However, money, huh..? I won’t let it sway my heart. At any rate, my current funds are slightly below 50 billion yen. But now, information is more important than money.

“Rather than money, I want to hear your story. Please answer my questions without any lies. That is the only way for you to stay alive.” I requested.

Upon hearing my threat, Romatto instantly became frightened.

But, even if he didn’t say anything, I do not intend to actually kill him. It was merely a threat. However, it will be boring if I only threatened him, which was why I took off my head equipment to reveal that I am human.

“Yo-You… You are a human!?” He yelled, eyes wide in disbelief.

A carrot and a stick. In this town filled with beastmen, with me being of the same race would give Romatto a ray of hope and a sense of familiarity.

“Yes, that’s right. So, please trust me. If you answer my questions, I will save your life.” I stated.

“I... I understand.” He quietened down immediately.

“Well then, first of all...” I trailed off as I placed the sake that I dangled on one hand onto the table. “First, would you care for a cup of sake? If you drink sake, your mind would calm down a little, even if you’re in such a place.”

I took out the cup that was wrapped in paper from my pocket, and poured sake into it. The smell of the alcohol wafts over and stimulates the nose and one’s appetite.

A loud gulping sound could be heard from Romatto’s throat. Feeling tempted, he raised his arms in the direction of the sake.

“Here you go.” I offered a cup to him.

“Ah...” Romatto sighed unconsciously as he sat cross legged in front of the table, and stretched his hand to receive the cup. Then, he drank it all in one breath. “Kaahhh! This is some unusual sake, but it’s not bad!”

He placed the empty cup on the table in delight. It seems like he became cheerful somehow.

“Another cup.” He demanded.

“Oh, that’s fine.” I said as I refilled his sake again.

He drank it all in one breath again. It would seem that he liked the sake a lot.

“Now that it’s about time, can I hear your story?” I asked without refilling the empty sake cup.

“Hmm? Ah, that’s right. Alright, ask me anything.” He puffed up his chest.

“How did you know about this town?” I started with a simple question.

“Ah, about that, we were tipped off by the disciple of a scholar, that there was a beastman town in this land.” He replied.

A scholar’s disciple… It must be a student of Frost.

“To be honest, the guys who heard this story didn’t believe it at all, but that disciple staked his own life on it when he reported it. If he is going that far, you can’t help but believe it. Also, the beastmen were certainly heading south.” Romatto continued his story. “So, there is possibility that they had, indeed, come together to build a town. When we threatened the scholar a little, he mentioned the same thing. That is the reason why the army was dispatched here.”

After he finished saying so, Romatto flicked the cup to demand for more sake.

As expected, the reason was Frost and his disciples.

I poured refilled his cup, feeling empty.

At that time, was it too naive of me to save them? Feelings similar to regret started to spread within my chest.

No, it was too late for that now. In the first place, it wasn’t possible for me to abandon them. With the exception of saving them, there was no other choice.

“What is the reason for you to invade this land? This place should have been a cursed place for you. Even if you occupied this place, you would just suffer great damage from the shaking ground.” I asked another question.

“Hmm? No, we didn’t intend to absorb this cursed place. In short, it’s colonization. We would have the beastmen do the labour, and only to take the juicy parts.” The young man stated smoothly.

Romatto confessed the intentions turning the beastmen into slaves nonchalantly without any reservations. It seemed like he could say it in peace because he knew that I am a human. It might also be the effects of the sake, and the way I talked.

“However, the Kingdom of Sandra was defeated this time. It was the Red Dragon Knights, if I’m not mistaken?” I changed the direction of the questioning.

“Fu! We have four powerful Knight Orders in our country! Red, Blue, Yellow, and Green! Each Knight Order was named after the Grand Dragons! When these four Knight Orders join hands, taking down a small town like this is nothing!” He boasted, slamming the cup onto the desk loudly.

I see, so these four Knight Orders were the main force of the Kingdom of Sandra. This is just like what I have heard from Frost. If the other Knight Orders were on the same level as the Red Dragon Knights, then their size would also be about 2000 people. Added with militia from the lords of each territory, it will create the huge army of the Kingdom of Sandra.

“However, isn’t the pride of the Knights the cavalry? The walls of this town will not fall just by being sieged by the cavalry.” I asked.

“Hahaha! Didn’t you see the infantry units behind? The territories to the north of here are the lands of Count Abroshov, and Count Sarah Bona. The number of people enlisted are more than 4000 despite being drafted from from two territories only!” Romatto laughed arrogantly.

“That is surely quite frightening.” I commented absently as I quickly gathered my thoughts on the enemy.

“Isn’t it?” He grinned widely.

In fact, it is indeed terrifying. If this town was attacked by 4000 men, this town will be done for. But, the strategy here would be to fight against them

first, before things can take such a turn.

“You are a human too, right? I’ve heard of you. The ruler of this town who’s a human, in other words, you. If you hand over this town, I will negotiate with the upper echelons to pardon and reward you. How’s that?” He offered smugly.

I shook my head in response to his temptation, and threw a new question at him.

“Isn’t there a way for the beastmen and humans to cooperate with each other?”

“Fuu, that is impossible. It’s natural for the weak to become food for the strong.” Romatto replied matter-of-factly.

“Is that so..?” I muttered to myself.

I never expected humans to coexist peacefully with the beastmen. If such a thing is possible in the first place, the beastmen would not have been driven to desperate situations. Even so, I still wanted to question it, to ask about it .

Even after that, Romatto continued talking about the circumstances of the kingdom smoothly while drinking the sake. Although there were many redundant parts of the story since I've already heard about them from Frost last time, the details being repeated increases the credibility of the story, proving that it is not wasteful.

The information gathered this time was the best so far. According to his story, they had intended to colonise this place. The kingdom didn't seem to have any intentions of residing on this land.

In other words, this land is a place where they still can't live in due to the harsh conditions.

Chapter 023 - Sandra Kingdom

Third person POV.

The castle where the king resides in is surrounded by a thick city walls with a population exceeding 40,000 people. This city is the imperial capital of the Kingdom of Sandra, Sandoria.

On that day, the guards who were stationed on the city walls spotted a military unit approaching from a distance.

“It’s the Red Dragon Knights! The Red Dragon Knights have returned from south!” The guard shouted.

The guards who were waiting for the return of the Red Dragon Knights eagerly dispatched a messenger on a fast horse to spread the news.

The news was then immediately spread all over the imperial capital. It was due to the fact that before the departure of this expedition, the Red Dragon

Knights had been the main topic for gossip.

Under the pretext of ‘the beastmen have gathered at the south and impertinently built a town, so by the King’s virtue and authority, the Order of the Red Dragon Knights had been sent out to subjugate them’ or so the rumours have said.

This is an era with few entertainments. The triumph victory of one’s own nation army strongly stimulates the pride of it people, it had become a pleasure that excel above everything else. That was why a great number of citizens flocked to the street that runs through straight from the citadel’s entrance to the castle, Cainbeth Street, in hopes of seeing the battle trophies won by the honoured Red Dragon Knights.

The citizens crowded both sides of the street, and there was not a single house from which people did not look out from.

The opponents were simply beastmen after all. It was an expedition where their victory had been decided from beginning. That was why people gathered without any hesitation. But, they did not know why the Red Dragon Knights did not send a messenger on a fast horse to inform all the residents.

Before long, the Red Dragon Knights made their appearance. The citizens welcomed the Red Dragon Knights with a shower of applause and shouts of joy.

“You’ve finally returned, Red Dragon Knights! Now then, please tell us about the results of the expedition!”

“Cheers! To the Red Dragon Knights, the best on this continent!”

The words of praise came from the people like a waterfall. It was only early afternoon, and the sun has sunk from the zenith a little, yet Cainbeth street was in an uproar, as if holding its own festival.

However, the state of the knights was a little strange when faced with the cheers of the citizens. The soldiers advancing through the street had long faces and an air of depression.

When the citizens noticed it, some stopped their applause, while others clamped their mouths shut, ending the shower of praises. Naturally, the cheers stopped, and the people whispered to each other of their suspicions.

“O-Oi, by any chance... Did they lose?”

“No, that can’t be true, right? After all, the opponents were just beastmen. Besides, look at the soldier's armor.”

From what the citizens could see, there were no traces of battle on the soldier's armor. Furthermore, the number of soldiers didn’t seem to have decreased.

In other words, the expedition was a big success. The beastmen must have lost their fighting spirits in front of the Red Dragon Knights’ strong army, hanging their heads low while wagging their tails.

However, what was with this current situation? Everyone tilted their heads in confusion.

Then, one soldier broke off from the formation and shouted loudly to the citizens who have gathered.

“I feel grateful to the people who have gathered here! But, there is disappointing news! The expedition failed!”

For the citizens, it was such a surprising announcement that made them doubt their ears. The voices of the people began to create a cacophony of sounds, with the main shouts being why and how.

“Silence! We were not defeated by the beastmen! Our commander-in-chief, Garland, suffered from illness due to the long expedition! In addition, several people died from the disease as well! We believe that it was a disease local to the South! In fear that the disease will spread from commander Garland himself, he had ordered a retreat, and unfortunately passed away immediately after that!” The soldier declared loudly, pausing slightly before continuing. “When he died, the commander had said so in his last breath! ‘Abandon myself who is the cause of the disease!’ Everyone, can you please give your condolences to our brave Commander Garland!”

The spreading of disease, the death of the commander, and their retreat...

“Oh... Something like that..!”

The joy suddenly turned into grief when they heard that Garland, a famous military man died from an illness. No matter how much he excelled in martial arts, one could not win against disease.

From the sadness of losing the nation’s hero, the citizen grieved over the fleeting lives of humanity. The soldier’s theatrical actions immediately caught the hearts of the people gathered there.

But, there was one person who was observing the condition of the knights and citizens from a building’s shadow disinterestedly.

“...Did they lose?” A tall scholar with golden hair muttered softly.

It was Frost. He had seen through the Red Dragon Knights’ lie about their defeat to protect their reputation.

The beastmen had left for the south two years ago. Within a short time, there was a human man who made a town rivaling that of the Imperial Capital there. Just by looking at one of the buildings that he created, one could see that he came from a place of advanced civilization. Above everything else, with only himself, he was able to make a large number of beastmen follow him, which was certainly abnormal.

“I wonder what will happen in the future..?” Frost muttered to himself again.

There were almost no resources in the southern lands. But this time, the kingdom knew of the power of the town of the beastmen that was not to be made light of.

Since the church had prohibited fights between nations now, a group of soldiers would definitely try to gain from this unexpected military expedition. They will try to persuade people of the danger of the beastmen in the south, and propose to conquer the south again.

Even so, taking into consideration of the costs of the expedition, the domestic affairs officials would certainly object to it. Frost had heard that the kingdom was responsible for supplying the food of the soldiers who went to the south this time.

Five hundred cavalrymen and several thousand infantrymen. A considerable amount of food was spent without getting anything in return.

The domestic affairs officials surely would not permit selling the skin before catching the bear happening a second time.

Thinking up to here, Frost shook his head.

“But, was there really no results?”

Frost was merely a scholar. Even if he racked his brains over it, he wouldn’t be able to do anything.

But, Frost was concerned about one thing. It was his former pupil who had served as a guide this time.

“I hope that he isn’t going to be killed in revenge for their defeat.” Frost sighed.

The secret information was sold for money, and Frost had already announced his expulsion.

But, a person’s feelings are something troublesome. Even though he had cut their ties, it wasn’t easy to abandon the anxiety inside his heart.

◆

As the Red Dragon Knights marched on Cainbeth street towards the castle, Vice Deputy Thomas went to the Imperial Court to have an audience with the King of Sandra.

Currently, Vice Deputy Thomas was in the middle of reporting in the throne room.

The king was seated on the throne while Thomas knelt down on one knee in front of him on the red carpet that extended from the throne. Furthermore, flanking Thomas were various military and civil officers facing each other outside the red carpet.

“Hmm, did you say that the Red Dragon Knights were defeated?” The king asked.

Upon hearing that Commander Garland and 5 other people under him had died in the battle against the enemy, the king groaned heavily.

“Yes! The five and Commander Garland were killed by strange magic from a distant place where arrows couldn’t reach.” Thomas confirmed his report.

The King groaned again.

“Let me present this.”

What Thomas took out from his chest pocket was a small lump of metal that lied quietly on his palm. One of the retainers picked it up and carried it to the king.

“What on earth is this?” The king inquired as he picked up the piece of metal and observed it at all possible angles.

“This metal lump flies like an arrowhead and cuts through our body and armor like they’re made of paper.” Thomas stated.

After penetrating through the body of someone wearing armor, this metallic lump only stopped after digging itself into the armour plate of the person behind them.

“What...” The king gasped.

“Before this strange magic is fully understood, I think we had better not march into the south again.” Thomas suggested.

The detailed report from Thomas was something he did to preserve the reputation of the Red Dragon Knights. If another Knight Order was victorious in an attack against the beastmen town, it would be inevitable for the Red Dragon Knights who bore the name ‘Dragon’ to receive criticism due to the disgrace.

However, if the unknown magic was already fully researched later on, there would be no problems for other Knight Orders to attack again.

In this case, they would be excused from losing because of the mysterious magic, and when the next expedition was successful, it could be said to be the result of the analysation of the strange magic.

But, there was a person attempting to ruin Thomas’ plan.

“You can’t do that!” From the military officers’ side, a large, muscular man with a splendid, bristly moustache raised his voice.

“Hmm, what is it, Barbarodem?” The king asked.

The man named Barbarodem was the leader of the Yellow Dragon Knights.

Barbarodem left the row, knelt next to Thomas, and protested.

“You can’t do that, Your Majesty! This will affect your honor!”

“What honor you are speaking of, Barbarodem?” The king questioned.

“I mean the prestige of the kingdom. Along with it is Your Majesty’s reputation.” Barbarodem replied sternly.

“Hmm... The king’s prestige, huh..?” When the king’s prestige was mentioned, the king groaned; no, it would be more accurate to say that he grunted, because the current king was a man who wasn’t very particular about his reputation.

After all, he was the 4th prince of the royal family. The seat of king only fell into his lap because his elder brothers died from war and disease. He became king by a stroke of luck, so he was someone who didn’t hold ambitions for others. The king hoped that he would be able to spend the rest of his life peacefully and uneventfully.

However, he couldn’t reveal these trains of thoughts to his retainers. For that purpose, in an attempt to maintain his appearance as a king, he was constantly in distress.

“Sir Barbarodem, didn’t you hear my story?” Thomas asked, dissatisfaction colouring his voice.

“Huh, what a greenhorn. According to your story, the opponent’s magic seemed to be a personal magic. On top of that, it was only magic of that level. There should only be one person who could use it. The enemy is someone we would be able to easily beat if surrounded by numbers.” On the contrary,

Barbarodem retorted sharply with beast-like eyes, making Thomas draw back.

Thomas was lost for words.

Barbarodem was right. In that battle, they could have cooperated with the infantry and attacked. However, Thomas was scared of unknown magic, and thought that there were multiple magicians of similar ability. Furthermore, aside from the metal shot at high speed, he had feared the potential casting of large-scale magic, and ordered the retreat.

When he thought of it again, there couldn't be many people who were able to use such magic as there were no reasons to hold back their magic in front of 500 cavalrymen. The withdrawal was Thomas' blunder that resulted from losing his composure when the Commander was shot.

"Your Majesty, please give the Yellow Dragon Knights an order to march to the South!" Barbarodem requested.

"Wait." The one who stopped Barbarodem was one of the people from the civil officers' side.

Barbarodem glared on the civil servant, but the person himself continued advising the king nonchalantly.

“The expenditure for this expedition is something that simply can’t be ignored. Moreover, the South is a distant land, and there aren’t any resources that are worthy of such an expense. For now, it would be best to only monitor the beastmen.” The civil officer proposed.

“You bastard! Do you understand what it means for a Knight Order of our glorious kingdom to be defeated by the beastmen?!” Barbarodem shouted furiously.

“Oh? Didn’t I hear that the army retreated because of a plague?” The shrewd civil servant dodged his excuse with a cool face.

“...That was what was announced to the public.” Barbarodem confirmed glumly.

"Why was that even declared? You could have just revealed it. The fact that we’ve been defeated by mere beastmen... Not even those from other countries would believe it." The officer scoffed.

“What about the troops?” Barbarodem tried for another angle.

“Isn’t this a good chance? In this peaceful time, a sly enemy has appeared. It would be an opportunity for them to concentrate on training. Everyone became careless recently. The soldiers who know the truth would be ashamed by their own incompetence.” The officer smiled.

“Hmph, you are only skilful with your mouth.” Barbarodem grunted after realising that he couldn’t win the verbal battle.

With the king’s permission, he returned back to his original position.

“Alright. We will suspend the capture of the beastmen town for time being. For now, we will monitor them, but do not neglect preparations so that we will be able to move immediately if anything happens.” The king decreed.

“““Yes!””” Everyone present chorused.

Chapter 024 - Tsutomu Sano ①

3rd POV

Author note:

For this round and the next one, a slightly hateful character will appear m(__)m

---

Commander Garland died in battle. The Red Dragon Knights were defeated.

Naturally, all 500 cavalrymen of the Red Dragon Knights knew the truth. As for the 4000 soldiers from the southern territory, setting aside the details, they only knew that the Knight Order had lost. Although a gag order has been issued, such orders would mean nothing next to the ever changing hearts of people.

Approximately one week after the Red Dragon Knights returned.

Rumors about the Red Dragon Knights sent to subjugate the south being

defeated by the beastmen were spread quickly all over the capital city.

However, it could be said that many of the citizens didn't trust the story because rumors of a spy from another country spreading the 'rumors' had reached the royal palace first even before the truth behind the battle in the southern territory had arrived.

They also arrested a person who was dressed like a secret agent in front of the citizens, acting out the play which they themselves had orchestrated where they had disguised themselves as the spy and pretended to be caught in public.

But, it wasn't the same with the soldiers. Unlike the citizens who gossiped and got second hand knowledge, the information that the soldiers received was definite and authentic since they received it directly from the concerned party, the Red Dragon Knights

In the evening, the true story about the southern subjection was being recited again. The storyteller was one of the 2 apprentice soldiers who was drinking wine in a room in the barracks.

One of them was a young man with light brown hair and a finely chiseled face,

and the other was a black haired young man with a childish face unbefitting his age. These two were so busy with their apprenticeships that they didn't have time to touch upon the truth about "the defeat of Knight Order" until now.

"I was told that the Red Dragon Knights were defeated by the beastmen and returned." The brown haired man stated.

The young man with brown hair then recited the story of the Red Dragon Knights defeat that was told by a certain knight today.

"No way, right?" The young man with black hair muttered doubtfully. His name was Tsutomu Sano.

Needless to say, Sano was the same as Nobuhide - he was transported to this world by god.

"Ah, it is the truth. Under Commander Garland, there were 4 or 5 direct retainers who had been injured, and managed to escape back home. The epidemic was one big fat lie." As the truth was confirmed once again by his colleague, Sano was left in shock.

The power that Sano received from god was【Sword Talent】【Small】【★】. Even with the ability, Sano could only be a mere Apprentice Knight. This is because the Knights consisted of strong warriors, so for the beastmen to be able to defeat the Knight Order was an unbelievable thing.

(That Garland..? It's a lie, right..?)

What shook Sano in particular was that Garland was killed in battle. Even amongst the Knight Order, the strength of Commander Garland was to the extent that you might say was abnormal.

—— Garland the Arrow Catcher.

Befitting the nickname, Garland was able to catch an arrow that was shot from approximately 10 meters with his bare hands. His reflexes and agility transcends those of a normal person. Garland's strength was considered first-rate even within the Red Dragon Knights. It was hard to imagine him dying in enemy hands.

"Are the beastmen that strong..?" Sano muttered.

Sano himself had heard about the strength of the beastmen from his senior knight.

That person had said ‘They aren’t an opponent for the knights’ with fearless smile.

(Damn! How can this kind of enemy be a small fry?!)

Sano cursed the knight he enquired inside his heart.

Sano had a conceited thought that he was the strongest. The power that he got from god had made himself thinking that he was special.

It’s true that he was inferior to the soldiers of the Knights Order. However, it was a difference of experience, and not the difference of talent.

Sano had that overconfidence with his ability. That was why when he heard the story of the Red Dragon Knights' defeat, he was shocked.

An existence stronger than the Knight Orders. Before he was able to overcome one wall, another higher wall appears. He couldn't help but think of his small existence.

His powerlessness was suddenly made known. He could only feel emptiness inside.

Then his fellow colleague said. "But those who had mastered martial arts wouldn't lose to a beastman. There was some other reason this time. Everything seemed to have been ruined by an unknown magic."

"An unknown magic?" Sano inquired.

"Yeah, from a distance that can't be reached by arrows, a small lump of iron seemed to have flown accompanied by the sound of thunder. It was able to easily pierce through the armor." The other apprentice detailed.

“What the hell is that?” Sano muttered.

Sano had learned a little about magic. Magic isn’t useable in fights. It should only be something insignificant. Before, he had considered about magic being among the cards, but now that he had become an apprentice knight, he was relieved that he had chosen【Sword Talent】.

Magic was nothing impressive.

He hardly was able to believe that there was a magic that could defeat Garland.

But then, something flashed through Sano’s mind like a lightning bolt.

(Wait... The sound of thunder, a small lump of iron..? Ah...)

Sano opened his eyes widely.

“Oi, what kind of guy threw that lump of iron?!” He demanded hurriedly.

“Oh, what is it all of sudden? How can I know about that? Other than the beastmen, who else could do that?” His colleague replied, startled.

“What about a human? Are there any humans in that town?!” Sano pressed.

“Humans? Ah, that’s right. From the stories I’ve heard, there was such a person commanding the beastmen.” The brown haired man answered.

“S-Seriously..?” Sano was shocked again.

The humans in this country look down on the beastmen. No, rather than looking down on them, they only consider them the same as animals. Having more intelligence than needed, they were considered to be beasts that needed discipline. That was the evaluation humans had of the beastmen in this world.

For a human to command such beastmen… It was highly unusual. Right... Just like him...

Sano patted the sword belted at his side. That sword wasn't a normal sword. Originally, it was from the card【Considerably Good Sword 】【★】. He thought that the weapon cards were only limited to swords and spears.

The sound of thunder and a lump of iron… Something struck Sano mind. It's【Guns】. In those countless cards there should be a gun card.

"Seriously..?" Sano muttered his favorite phrase since his childhood once again, and gulped down the red wine sitting his wooden cup.

However, the alcohol wasn't able to inhibit his brain's function. Sano's consciousness became clearer instead.

(It seems like I won't be able to get drunk tonight either...)

Sano calmly thought of what he should do if he met this '2nd person', his fellow countryman, while nodding to his colleague's words.

By the way, the ability of Sano had was certainly【Sword Talent】. That was

why, how he was able to obtain the【Considerably Good Sword】should be explained.

The story goes back to the time when Sano came to this world.

Chapter 025 - Tsutomu Sano ②

3rd person point of view.

Continuing from the previous chapter…

The next chapter will return back to the main character.

There was a pure white space. All the humans who boarded the train this morning were gathered there, forced to choose a card by an old man who claimed to be god. They were surrounded by a dazzling light before disappearing.

Sano, who was in the eleventh grade, was one of them too. When Sano had chosen his card and confirmed it, he closed his eyes due to the bright light.

“Are you serious..?” When he opened his eyes once again, the words that left his mouth were tinted with surprise.

Sano was standing on a gently sloped hill. From there, he could see a big mountain, a village spread out at its foot, as well as the endless nature beyond.

“Damn it! What on earth am I supposed to do in a place like this?!” Sano cursed while putting his hand into his pocket to take out his cellphone.

There might be a possibility that this place is Japan, and cellphones would be useable. Sano harboured that slight hope inside his mind.

First, he shoved his hand into the right pocket, next was the left pocket, and then, he dug further into his blazer’s pocket. But...

“Oi! This is a lie, right? My cellphone is missing!” He complained.

Before being able to confirm his last hope, he found that his cellphone was

missing. There was only a wallet in his pockets.

“Come to think of it...” Sano noticed that the card he chose just minutes ago was missing from his hand.

For a moment, he wondered if he lost it. He thought and panicked while looking at the ground, looking for the card [Sword Talent] [Small]. However, if it was an ability, it would be normal to think that the card would disappear.

“First, what should I do now?” Even though he muttered so, he didn’t actually have to think for long.

First of all, he needed to go to a place with people. He felt like he should go to the village which he saw at the foot of the mountain.

Just as Sano took his first step...

“W-What?” He could hear sounds coming from behind him, making body jerk to a stop unintentionally.

He had made sure that there wasn’t anyone around when he checked the surroundings just now.

Sano whimpered from the tension. He knew that his heartbeat was speeding up. But, he thought ‘wait a moment!’ If someone were to appear in this situation...

Thinking up to there, Sano peered behind him cautiously. A young man wearing a black gakuran stood behind him. In other words, a person from the white room earlier.

“Don’t scare me!” Sano snarled.

“M-My bad.” The other man stuttered.

“So? Did you also come from that white place?” Sano questioned.

“Y-Yeah…” The student replied timidly.

“Anyway, I feel reassured. it would be unbearable if I was the only one here.” Sano stated.

“Ah... Ah, me too...” The newly summoned man mumbled.

Sano thought that he was a weird guy who only replied softly and vaguely. However, he had been concerned about something since a while ago.

“Hey, what’s that thing you’re holding?” Sano asked.

The thing held by the man easily exceeded 1 meter in length, and could only be a sword.

“The... The card I got from the old man from before became a sword.” He held it in both of his hands like a child boasting about his treasure.

“Are you serious?! What?! That’s a sword right? Which reminds me, the old man did say something about weapons as well.” Sano mused.

“The… The description was [Considerably Good Sword].” The other man informed him proudly.

“Oh, is that so? I see.” Sano nodded.

God did say that he would team up people who pulled a low grade card with another person.

“Your sword... How many stars does it have?” Sano asked.

“Eh? Uh, only one.” The student answered.

As Sano had guessed. God didn’t say anything about the stars on the cards. However, the guy before his eyes didn’t seem to think anything about the star ranking.

“I’m Sano Tsutomu. You are?” Sano introduced himself.

“Su... Suzunose Kai. What is... Sano-kun’s card?” Suzunose asked hesitantly.

“Me? Mine is [Sword Talent].” Suzunose replied vaguely.

“Err... Is... Is that a great thing?” Kai asked, confused.

“Well, I think it’s... It’s decent..?” Sano replied unsurely.

That was a lie. The [small] and [★] written on the card… If you had seen those, you would immediately know that Sano’s card was worthless .

Sano then understood why Suzunose hadn’t noticed the meaning of the number of stars.

[Considerably Good Sword] [★]

There was a distracting [Considerably Good] portion, so Suzunose must have overlooked it. But well, it should be fine as it is. It wasn’t necessary for me to tell him.

For the time being, Sano and Suzunose headed towards the village at the foot of the mountain.

The fields were spread out, and the houses were scattered around sparsely. The fields weren't that big, which means that the village's life wasn't dependent on farming, or so Sano concluded.

When they arrived at the edge of the village, Sano called out to the man who had been looking at them cautiously from his field.

"Excuse me! We are travelers! Is there some place for us to stay in in this village?" Sano shouted.

It would be too awkward and one-sided if they were to ask for a place to permanently stay in this village since they didn't have any place else to go. Therefore, it was better to be thought of as travelers, and stay in the village for several days while gathering information for the future, or so Sano planned.

"...Money, do you have any?" The villager approached Sano grumpily.

“Eh, no. We don’t have any, but...” Sano floundered.

The villager frowned upon hearing Sano’s answer. His face showed blatant disgust. Sano thought that he must have answered badly.

“A-Ah, that’s right! We have gold! But, it’s foreign gold! Perhaps it would be worth some money!” Sano took out the wallet from his pocket breast, and retrieved a coin.

Then, the villager’s hand extended towards Sano abruptly, making him squeak in alarm. But, he didn’t even have time to complain. His wallet was in the hands of the villager, and after he confirmed the contents, he put it inside his pocket.

“Hmm, this is good. I will settle it with the village chief.” The villager stated before taking Sano and Suzunose to the village chief’s house for a simple interview.

The village chief seemed to have understood their circumstances, and said [If you work well, I wouldn’t mind if you stay in this village for the rest of your life.]

Since there seemed to be an abandoned house, Sano and Suzunose were allowed to stay in the village

The villager escorted them to their house, and Sano murmured something along the lines of ‘give me a break’.

“Is this the house that we’ll live in..?”

In front of them was a ragged hut with only one room inside.

After entering the house, Sano sat down. On the other hand, Suzunose remained standing uncomfortably. It was natural since Suzunose had remained silent until now, and left everything to Sano.

“Hey, why didn’t you say anything just now?” Without trying to hide his displeasure, Sano complained to Suzunose.

“S-Sorry.” Suzunose apologized and hung his head.

“Well, it’s fine, I suppose. Just don’t do it again.” Sano decided to let it go.

“U-Understood.” Suzunose nodded furiously.

“Hey, can you lend me that sword for moment?” Sano asked.

“Eh..?” Suzunose held his sword protectively.

It was Suzunose’s only mental support. On the way to the village, Sano has asked for permission to touch the sword, but had been rejected.

That was why Sano thought that he couldn’t possibly decline since he was indebted to him now.

“Hey, isn’t it okay? My card is [Sword Talent]. Aren’t we grouped together because of this?” Sano urged.

“But...” Suzunose bit his lip.

“Ha... I was robbed of my wallet to get this house.” Sano muttered loudly, wanting it to sound like he was mumbling to himself, but those words were clearly meant for Suzunose to hear.

“A-Alright, I understand...” Sano’s words had unexpectedly affected Suzunose more than expected, and he finally agreed to lend his sword to him.

“Oh, my bad.” Sano accepted the sword that was handed out, and grasped the handle in his hand.

Could this strangely familiar feeling towards the sword be an illusion? Or, could it be the ability of [Sword Talent]?

When he pulled the it out of its sheath, the blade shone like a mirror, causing Sano to release a sigh of admiration.

Sano went out with the sword drawn. Behind him, Suzunose followed while seeming to want to say something.

“Waa! Ho!” Sano swung the sword cheerfully.

At the beginning, the sword was quite heavy, and Sano was thrown off by its weight. However, after swinging it several times, he came to understand the best way to swing it. Somehow, the sharpness of the sword seemed to increase gradually too.

“This [Sword Talent] is incredible!” Sano raised his voice joyfully.

His athletic ability was originally average. So something like this happening was the first time.

“Oi, oi! Isn’t this like I am some kind of a genius?!” Sano laughed smugly.

He was fascinated by his ability. Was this what first-class professional athletes in the previous world had been feeling?

(How unfair! Those people were relying on talent!)

Sano cursed inside his mind while grinning.

He had attained a talent similar to those professional athletes, so it was natural for him to not be able to stop laughing.

“Fuu...” Before long, Sano stop swinging the sword to take a break.

Suzunose had been waiting for a while, and was about to call out to him when at that moment, Sano started to run.

“Ah!” Suzunose screamed.

Sano headed toward a thin tree

“Haa!” With a shout, Sano swung the sword horizontally.

The slash could be considered magnificent according to the standards of an amatuer. Again, just to emphasise, an amatuer, that is.

Then, the tree was split exactly into half right in the middle. The top half fell heavily, and rolled onto the ground.

Sano and Suzunose's lives in the village started. Their work consisted of fishing, picking fruits, mushrooms, and edible wild plants in mountain and rivers throughout spring to fall, and when it was winter, they went hunting.

At present, it was spring, the same season as Japan. Sano and Suzunose were plucking weeds and plowing the ruined field with wooden hoes.

Not used to farm work, they had muscle pains everyday. Swinging the wooden hoe once wouldn't till the soil deep enough, so they had to plow the same place several times. But, they still worked desperately.

Well, it was only Suzunose, and not Sano.

In the beginning, Sano plowed the fields together with Suzunose, but afterwards, he had only been following the villagers to pick edible wild plants. That was because that was easier. Sometimes, he would work with Suzunose on the fields, and at that time, Sano would exert a power beyond his limit to show off how easy fieldwork was to him.

Suzunose may be timid, but that didn't mean that he was without pride. Looking at how Sano seemed to be able to work on the field calmly, he tried to work on the field desperately. This way, Sano was able to focus on the easy work of collecting edible wild plants.

Eventually they became accustomed to life in the village.

However, Sano was not satisfied with this. It was natural because in this world, everything was barely enough. Still, there were many things he needed to do. It could be said that they were so busy everyday that there was no room for boredom.

Anyway, Sano wanted to eat something that could satisfy him. Then, what could he do? Therefore, hunting was the answer for Sano.

It was said that the humans in this village only hunt in winter. As hunting involves life-threatening risks, there was no reason to do it from spring to autumn when food was abundant. Also, the activity of the beasts in the mountain would decline in winter, which was also another reason that made hunting easier.

When spring was about to end, Sano was suggesting that he go out to hunt.

“You know, since I am going hunting, can you lend me your sword?” Sano asked.

“Ugh...” Suzunose showed a dissatisfied expression when he heard Sano’s suggestion.

But, Sano knew that Suzunose was the type that was weak to pressure.

(There was such a guy in my class too. The guy couldn’t speak his mind and was always careful of relationships with others.)

Suzunose was someone who couldn’t speak his own mind clearly. Sano kept asking for the sword under the pretext of his former achievements, and before long, he succeeded in making Suzunose lend his sword to him.

The next day, Sano entered the mountains, the place where people only go to during winter, alone. Scratching the trees along the way so he wouldn’t get lost, he advanced deep into the mountains.

After a short while, a wild boar appeared in front of him. Sano recognized the wild boar as a pig. It was a slow witted animal which exists only to be hunted by humans.

In the previous world’s TV shows, wild boars were often depicted falling victim to the hunters’ guns easily.

“Heh… The lowest level monster to be subdued, huh?” With confidence, Sano removed the sword from its sheath.

But, it was different. When its territory was invaded, it had became angry, and the wild boar that charged with the speed of a car was a being to be feared of.

“Hii!” Sano shrieked.

He was able to move his body to avoid the wild boar instead of freezing on the spot, which may be thanks to the experience from playing sports. But, the wild boar changed its direction and made a curve, heading towards Sano again.

(Are you serious?! Shit!)

Sano cursed.

However, when the boar was about to smash into him, Sano took one clumsy step and moved his body sideways. The move decided the outcome of their clash.

Sano avoided the wild boar’s charge right before they clashed, and swung his sword instinctively, slashing the wild boar from it’s lower jaw to the tip of its nose. The boar squealed one last time before collapsing .

“T-This bastard!” Sano turned to stab the head of the wild boar furiously.

With the power of [Sword Talent] combined with [Considerably Good Sword], he was able to cut through the hard skull of the wild boar easily. Blood gushed out from the wild boar's head, and it stopped moving completely. It had died.

"Y-Yeah! I did it! Serves you right!" Sano cheered loudly, sneering at the boar's corpse.

Excitement. Sano felt an indescribable feeling swelling in his chest.

He had won and lived on while the wild boar was defeated and lost its life. It was clear who was on winning and losing side. The sense of superiority built up inside of him, and satisfied his heart.

(Who would be able to do something like this besides me? A high school student who can kill a wild boar with a sword would only be me!)

The surge of his conceit increased and even extended to comparing himself with the previous world's ordinary people. Sano displayed his power once more by letting loose a loud battle cry.

“Heh, if the people in the village saw this, they would surely be surprised.” Sano imagined the look of awe from the villagers as he dragged the heavy boar down the mountain after his excitement had settled.

“You... That.!.” At the foot of the mountain, the villagers doubted their eyes when they saw Sano dragging the wild boar.

Wild boars were dangerous creatures. The tusks that stuck up from it’s lower jaw can easily pierce through a person’s flesh and rip into the blood vessels. It was able to move quickly, and its body was also protected by a thick layer of meat. A group of people would be needed to kill it. And that was the case for winter, when it’s movement was dulled from cold.

But, Sano hunted a wild boar during its active season in spring, and managed to defeat it with a sword alone. This was something to be surprised about .

“Hey, this wild boar sure is heavy, huh?” Chuckling nonchalantly, Sano acted as if it was an everyday thing.

From that day onwards, Sano became a hero of the village. Once every few days, Sano would go hunting and bring a big game back home. The quantity of meat acquired was something that Sano and Suzunose couldn't finish eating alone. So, the remainder of the meat was distributed to the villagers.

The villagers who received the meat were wholeheartedly pleased and showered Sano with praise. When Sano took down a bear, they even conducted a small festival, and made Sano the guest of honour. From then on, the [Considerably Good Sword] started to settle on Sano's waist naturally.

One day, they had a conversation.

"U-Um... The sword... Can you lend that to me..?" Suzunose approached Sano who was lying down.

"What for?" Sano yawned.

"Oh, for me to exercise." Suzunose mumbled.

"Hmmm… Well, it's fine. Remember to return it back later, okay?" Sano had treated the [Considerably Good Sword] as his own thing, and Suzunose wasn't

able to say anything against that too.

One year had passed since they first came to the village. It was the 2nd spring in the foreign world for Sano and Suzunose.

Recently, Sano was full of dissatisfaction towards life in the village. Having extra leisure time, everyday felt so boring. Without having anything to do, he missed the life he had from the previous world.

Even if he wanted to play with women, there were only conservative women of the suburbs . As soon as he tried to hold their hands, he would be choked with the word ‘marriage’.

Above all, Sano felt great dissatisfaction having to share a house with Suzunose. Living with Suzunose felt like a burden.

Sano would hand over the game he hunted to villagers, and they would skin it and later, he would receive half of it. The furs (asset) had already piled into a tower in their house. All of them were earned entirely by Sano alone.

As for Suzunose, he had only worked on the fields. Once in awhile, he would talk about fertilizers to appeal his work, but that didn't matter to Sano. What Suzunose had contributed was only the [Considerably Good Sword]. Now, even that had settled by Sano's side.

At that time, a merchant came to the village. The merchant travelled around villages in spring to stock up on furs obtained from hunting in winter. Sano went to hear a story from the merchant to kill time. Then the merchant talked about life in town which seemed like paradise.

Inside Sano, there was always the longing for town life. He thought that if it was the city, life would be more enjoyable than this shabby village. Above anything else, he was curious about how far he could go with his [Sword Talent].

He had been thinking leaving for a long time, but he couldn't gather his determination. Now, he won't waver anymore.

Sano sold all of the furs to the merchant, and on that evening, he fled from the village with the [Considerably Good Sword] on his waist.

The next day, it was said that screams could be heard all day from a certain house.

Chapter 026 - Merchant ①

The beastmen were aiming with their bows atop the stone wall.

“Aim towards the incoming enemy infantry! Now, shoot!” I ordered.

All the arrows were shot at once by my order. The arrows poured down like rain and pierced into the ground.

However, the enemy soldiers aren’t there.

“Ladders were attached to the walls! The enemy is climbing up the walls! Drop the boulders!” I barked.

The beastmen dropped the boulders from the walls according to my

instructions.

But, there was no one getting hit by the boulders.

“The enemy got inside! Stab them!” I yelled.

The beastmen with short spears thrusted them into the open space. Naturally, because it’s an open space, there can’t be any enemies there.

Then, what on earth are we doing?

It goes without saying that this is a training exercise in preparation for a potential enemy attack.

It has been a few day since since the Red Dragon Knights came here. The town has already returned to its normal, peaceful state. But, I am still concerned about how long this peace can last...

Sandra Kingdom was defeated this time. But, what kind of action will the kingdom take in future?

If they become angered, will they send their army back once again? Or, after this heavy defeat, will they come back to attack after careful preparation? Or, could they have concluded that there are low gains but high risks so they will not concern themselves with this land any more?

However, there is no answer. That is so because there are too few pieces of information to deduce the answer from.

Thus, if Sandra Kingdom attacks again, we need to be prepared here. First of all, I need to expect the worst result so that I can prevent it from happening.

Therefore, I decided to do training once a week.

On top of the stone walls, yelling with gusto were the beastmen wielding short spears, fighting an invisible enemy. At the beginning, everyone was embarrassed. However, when they saw me taking the mock battle seriously, their embarrassment and hesitation disappeared.

“UOOO! You damned humans! We will make you realize the terror of the Goblin Tribe!” One of the goblins swung his own knife around wildly.

It’s good to have fighting spirit, but, based on the small body of the goblin tribe, they merely troops in charge of supplies. So, why they are here? Because I didn’t know when they might need to fight, so I don’t mind their presence.

In addition, each tribe’s chief will take command together with me, so they continue to practice to switch positions accordingly.

“Alright! The simulation ends here! Thanks for your hard work! Please return your weapons and move to collect the arrows promptly!” I announced.

After they were finally freed from the stiff atmosphere, everyone’s serious expressions changed into smiles. While shouting joyously, everyone descended from the walls to collect the arrows.

Meanwhile, my eyes were looking at the man from the Goblin Tribe.

“Hmph. Humans are nothing in the face of the Goblin tribe.” The man of the Goblin tribe muttered so with satisfied expressions although there was nothing there.

There are fallen humans reflected in his eyes I guess...

Autumn was soon over, and winter had arrived. The air became cold. During this season, the townspeople liked to warm themselves with Hibachi.

Because there is a need to be careful of carbon monoxide poisoning, I asked them to be careful if they felt a sour taste linger in their mouth from the end of autumn to the beginning of winter.

Thanks to that, people who become unconscious because of carbon monoxide poisoning was a thing of the past. Later, everyone took careful note of the ventilation when they use the Hibachi.

As for the person who became unconscious, because they were discovered early, they managed to be saved.

Well, I didn’t need to worry for myself since I don’t use a Hibachi. I am eating oranges while huddled inside the warm kotatsu. Viva modern civilization!

On one of the winter days, I was watching a DVD of an overseas comedy drama while inside the kotatsu at home.

“Hahahahahaha!” Wild laughter escaped from me.

Gee, even if it’s another world, I can still live a modern life. This is so good.

Is this what they call luxury?

Then the telephone I placed at the corner of the room rang. I pressed the pause button to stop the video. There should be no tasks that need to be reported today.

I picked up the phone uneasily.

“Fujiwara-sama? This is the Leopard tribe.” The voice on the other end of the line reported.

It’s a trifling story, but there are two telephones that connect to my house now. One at Chief Jiharu’s house, and another one was entrusted to Kobold tribe’s store. Everyone except the Wolf tribe usually uses the one at the store.

“What happened?” I asked.

The voice of the leopard tribesman a while ago didn’t seem to be in a hurry. That means it shouldn’t be something important.

While I was thinking like that...

“Humans came over again.” The person stated calmly.

“What did you say?!” I raised my voice unintentionally. “What’s the scale?!”

“There are 3 people. They introduced themselves as merchants, and said that they came for business. They want to talk to the head of the town.” The leopard tribesman continued his report, unruffled.

What, there’s only 3 people, huh? I was relieved although I felt strength leaving my body. So that’s why the person from other side can report it calmly, huh?

“Understood. I will go there immediately. Please keep the humans outside the town. Don’t start a fight. Absolutely don’t do that, okay?” I ordered firmly before hanging up.

“However, merchants, huh?” I grinned.

I think that they are most likely spies from the Sandra Kingdom disguised as merchants. But, if they were truly merchants, then it would certainly be a good opportunity for me.

Before long, we might need to prepare for a war. If you ask what is the most important thing needed for that, I can confidently say that it’s money.

The ability to make town. This ability is extremely simple. I can buy everything with money and organize the town. With only this, financial power is obviously needed.

To be honest, as long as there is money, everything can be done with this ability. But, if I don't have any money, I can't do anything. The less money I have, the possible things I can do will be fewer.

The problem is lies in increasing the funds. Currently, there is still 49,8 billion yen. The profit increased from the town’s businesses, but only slightly.

A town with a population that doesn’t even reach 2,000 people... If we’re looking at long term, we have a reasonable income. But we can't get a remarkable increase within a year.

Shall we sell the city and try creating a new town in the middle of the desert where no foreign enemies exist? I also thought about something like that.

But, that is out of question.

When I [sell] what I [purchased], there is an unfavorable condition that shouldn't be overlooked. Once you [purchase] it, you can only [sell] it for 1/100 of its original value.

This was a town I built using around 50 billion yen. If the sale price becomes only 500 million yen, I wouldn’t be able to sell it easily.

I can't expect income from the town. Then, what should I do?

If inside isn’t good, then look outside. We need to pay more attention to human society. If I sell something unusual to the humans in this world, I will be

able to earn a ton of money.

That method is falling right in front of me now.

“Fufufu, the time has come. Alright, let me show you my various spices.” While I erase my smile naturally, I readied my body.

Several minutes later...

After I equip my usual equipment, I ride Catherine to the north gate of town. A large crowd of people have already gathered there.

Urgh. Although I told them not to put a hand on the humans, it still isn't okay to intimidate them by surrounding them.

Well, I understand their feelings. After Frost came to the town, the human army appeared on this land. That's why everyone in town was thinking that even though there were only a few humans, they still need to be cautious.

"Please make way!" I shouted as I informed everyone my arrival.

"Oi, Fujiwara-sama is here!"

"Make way!"

The crowd yelled as they divided into two and formed a path in the middle.

Are you curious about this reaction? Since I repelled the human army alone, I gained even more admiration from the beastmen than before.

And then, on the road ahead, I can see three humans with their carriages. One of them was a woman with red hair wearing a coat, while the other two were a blond man and woman wearing silver armor.

The only common thing between these three people was that they were young. None of them looked to be over 30 years old.

“Oh, finally someone who seems to be able to understand has come.” Among the three people, the woman with red hair spoke.

I can hear a little bit of accent clinging to her words. As for my impression of her, she seems to be a friendly woman. She doesn't seem to be vigilant, nor did she try to coerce or flatter me. She is just friendly. At least it looked like that.

But, the man and woman, who seemed to be swordsmen, flanking her were different. Both had their hands on their sword hilts while watching the beastmen carefully.

“My name is Elsa Polo. The master of the Polo firm. You are the head of the beastmen town, Fujiwara-san right?” Elsa introduced herself.

“Yes, that’s right. How do you know about me?” I asked warily.

“I heard stories from the scholar, Frost-han. He also asked me to deliver a letter to you. Here.” She took out a letter from her breast pocket.

However, the distance between us was around 10 meters.

“Can someone take the letter on my behalf?” I asked.

Following my words, a man from the Leopard Tribe stepped forward.

“What, aren’t you being too cautious?” The woman smiled.

“You can say that to those two swordsmen.” I retorted. as Elsa handed the letter to the man of the Leopard Tribe.

Even after hearing what I said, the two swordsmen still had their hands on their swords, and didn’t switch their stances.

“Ah, stop, stop it! Reina! Ryle! I have already said it before we arrived here! You only need to act as bodyguards until we reach the town! Don’t fight with the beastmen! Release your hands from the sword hilts now!” Elsa ordered, annoyed.

They looked at each other, then separated their hands from the sword hilts and stood straight obediently.

“Is it ok like this? If you are still not satisfied, do you want to take custody of their swords?” Elsa asked.

“Yes, please.” I smiled at her.

“Eh?” Elsa squeaked in bewilderment.

The two swordsmen looked at Elsa with cold eyes, as if saying ‘don’t say

something unnecessary’.

“Shouldn't you say "I don't mind" here? It's where you should trust us right?!” Elsa protested.

“No, because one’s life is more important than trust.” I replied smoothly.

“Uuu... Then it can’t be helped! Reina! Ryle! Put down your swords!” Elsa demanded.

After hesitating for a moment, Reina and Ryle threw the swords onto the ground while clicking their tongues. That tongue-clicking wasn’t for us, but for Elsa.

While the beastmen picked them up, Elsa seemed to feel awkward as she gave me a bitter smile.

“With this, can you trust us a little bit?” She pleaded.

“Yes, probably.” I answered.

I opened the letter from Frost and read the contents. What was written there was apology after apology, and that he felt bad. There were also details about how the army was dispatched to this town.

As for the details, it matched with the contents of Romatto, who was still being held captive.

First of all, he apologized without any words of excuse. Assuming that Elsa is a spy, then Frost wrote this letter to make me lower my guard. How naive.

“Then, I heard that you are a merchant?” I asked after stowing away the letter.

“That’s right. We came here to do business with you. I heard from Frost-han about an unusual liquor. Anything is ok. If there is something rare and unusual, can you sell it to us?” Elsa explained.

“Hmm...” I thought about the situation at hand.

There wasn’t any suspicious behavior for now. Anyway, I will hear what she has to say first before making my decision.

“Alright. I will allow you into the town.” I decided.

Chapter 027 - Merchant ②

I dismissed the gathering crowd. As for the Kobold tribe, I asked them to quickly set up simple things to tie down the horses in the vacant land at the 13th district.

The reason why I didn’t put the horses in the grazing lands was because I didn’t know what the camels with their violent tempers might do.

We went along the street with me riding Catherine while Elsa and the swordsmen stayed in their horse-drawn carriage. Three wolf tribesmen served as our escorts.

“Hoo ~ Well, it's a liddle-biddy town, but this is quite a big deal. It's like we are in a different world.” Elsa exclaimed as she looked around the town in wonder.

The two swordsmen were the same, and looked around restlessly. Then, Elsa seemed to notice something as she sniffed around.

“What is this? This town... It is remarkably cleaner than ours!” Elsa said as she cast her eyes on the ground restlessly. She seemed to be looking for something.

“There is nothing there!” Elsa exclaimed.

“And ‘that’ is?” I casually asked Elsa.

“T-That is that.” Elsa said vaguely, her face becoming slightly red.

Yes, [that] can be perceived in many ways, so it is impossible to answer it correctly without understanding it.

“No, even if you tell me something like that, I don’t understand...” I stated.

“That is that! Don’t make a beautiful and innocent girl say something like that!” Elsa suddenly became angry.

“Ha?” I really didn’t understand why.

“Umm... It's about night soil.” The male swordsman who remained indifferent elaborated.

Night soil, in other words, excrements That reminds me, I heard a story about them throwing away the excrement from the window into the town in medieval Europe. In other words, Elsa is asking why is there no large amounts of excrement to be found on the ground.

By the way, I didn't know about this, but this world has a culture that can be said to be excessively shy, especially concerning smell/odor. Looks like it’s their main subject of embarrassment. That was why Elsa had tremendous resistance about saying foul things like that.

“The reason why this town is clean is because we have restrooms in various places. The excrement collected from each restroom will be thrown out daily by the person in charge to a distant place everyday. Afterwards, we dry it out. Because we dried it out quickly, it doesn’t smell.” I explained.

“Is that so? It’s much better than our town. Isn’t it difficult?” Elsa asked.

“Well, because there’s not many people, it is still under our control.” I replied nonchalantly.

“Ho? Elsa huffed, impressed.

But, when the female swordsman listened to our talk, I noticed that she frowned in displeasure. Did we say something to hurt her feelings?

“That’s right, what is with the houses in this street? I noticed that there is a large shop at the entrance, but almost all of them are closed.” Elsa pointed out.

“We have a small population.” I stated.

“Hey, is it okay to look at the stores for a while?” Elsa requested.

“I don't mind, but there are nothing else besides sake, clothes and sundries. Is that ok?” I shrugged casually.

“Then, later is okay.” Elsa nodded.

And then, we arrived at an unused store in the middle of the street. It is to avoid them meeting Romatto, who was still being held captive at the inn.

First of all, the store we entered isn't the store in the main street. The reason was to avoid public eyes when they are here. I do not want to expose them to the humans that they hate so much in town.

"Please use this place while you stay in this town." I told the three.

The store is a 2-story, Japanese-styled storehouse.

After they have unloaded their baggage from their carriage, a wolf tribesman took their horses to the 13th district.

When I open the door and entered with them, I provided a brief explanation regarding the amenities, especially regarding how to handle the fire. I also gave them a warning to not wander around the town without permission. Then, we move to tatami room on the 2nd floor.

“Please, sit down.” I offered.

“...” The three remained silent.

Oh? Even though I offered them a seat, none of the three tried to sit down. There were no floor cushions since the floor is tatami, so they will be able to sit down without sitting cross legged even if they were women.

“Umm... I want to fix my make up...” Elsa requested nervously.

Fixing make up is a secret code. Hahaha, I understand.

That reminds me, when we entered the room, the girls seemed to be perplexed when asked to take off their shoes. No matter how they sit down, their feet will be seen. In other words, it's that.

“I understand. I will fetch some drinks, so make yourself at home.” I stated and left.

I told the people from the wolf tribe who kept waiting on the first floor that I will be back immediately before returning back home with Catherine, who was lying outside.

Several minutes later...

While hanging the sake jug on one of my arms, I used both hands to carry a tray with 3 lidded vessels on it. The contents of these three vessels were reserved for today.

“Elsa-san, can I come in?” I asked for permission.

“Yes.” She replied.

After getting permission, I opened the sliding door. A floral scent drifted out from inside. It’s the smell of perfume.

“I am really sorry for my rudeness.” Elsa apologised as all three of them stood up to greet me.

“No, I don’t mind at all.” I replied easily. “Please, sit down.”

Elsa sat down, cross-legged, while the two swordsmen sat in seiza.

What is this? Doesn’t she feel embarrassed at all? I don’t understand her at all.

While thinking such a thing, I sat cross-legged too.

“Please try this rare liquor which Frost-sensei was talking about.” I pour the sake for Elsa and the swordsmen.

“Oh, so this is it!” Elsa stared at the cup excitedly.

Of course, because I will be troubled if they become strangely cautious of me, I poured the sake for myself as well, and drank it first.

“Then, please drink up.” I offered.

First, Elsa swallowed her saliva and picked up her cup as the two swordsmen picked up the cups as well.

“This is certainly some rare liquor.” Elsa licked it to taste it.

Her face became serious, completely different from her expressions up till now. Should I say that this is the face of a merchant; as if she’s evaluating this sake?

“By the way, what kind of relationship do you have with Frost-sensei?” I asked.

“Hm? There’s no particular relationship, to be honest.” She answered plainly.

They aren’t acquaintances? Is that true?

“Then why do you have a letter from Frost-sensei?” I questioned.

“The Red Dragon Knights had come here, right?” Elsa asked.

“Yes.” I nodded.

“After that, the Red Dragon Knights were defeated by you, and returned. Is it right up to here?” She asked.

“That is right.” I nodded once more.

“To tell you the truth, the Red Dragon Knights suffered from a plague, so they couldn’t help but return back to the country. Well, that is the story back in the kingdom. However, after bribing the soldiers, I was able to hear the true story.” She stated.

“Ho?” I mused.

The Red Dragon Knights reluctantly retreated because of plague, huh? That is a plausible story to save their face.

“Then, after hearing that the Red Dragon Knights were defeated, it struck me. A town that was able to beat the Red Dragon Knights... I thought that this town which had gathered the beastmen together wasn’t simply a paper-tiger town.” She explained. “If we were able to open a trade route here, it won’t be strange if we could make huge earnings. That was why we earnestly asked Frost-han about the route to find this beastman town first. We were able to hear about this town in exchange for delivering the letter.”

“I see. Does this mean that other merchants will come here too?” I asked.

“No, I don’t think so. After all, this is a beastman town. No matter how many lives they have, it will not be enough.” Elsa laughed.

“Then, why did you come to such a dangerous place?” I questioned.

“That is of course, for the sake of accomplishment. Back in the kingdom, we are just a small commercial firm. We will not be able to move forward if we don’t step forward because of the danger. You will not gain anything without going out to adventure.” She snorted.

I get the story now. Looking at her behavior, Elsa didn’t seem to have told any lies here.

“Honestly speaking, are you a secret agent from Sandra Kingdom?” I decided to be direct.

“Haa? No, wait a minute. I thought you are going to ask a strange question. So you are suspecting us?” Elsa sighed.

“Yes, well...” I just shrugged in reply.

“I will say it clearly. If I do such thing, I will never become a full-fledged merchant. Well, I can't give you any proof though.” Elsa huffed.

“What do you think Sandra Kingdom will do from now on?” I wanted to get her opinion as one of their citizens.

“I did just say that we are merchants right? Well, it's okay. The price of wheat is stable. At least for time being, there will not be any movement. The wheat merchant has connections with many people from the government. If the army makes a movement, it will boost the value of wheat immediately. Moreover, because there is a price limit set by the country, there is a limit to how much they will be able to make a profit. So, if it is repeated frequently, they will be able to amass a huge amount of profit.” Elsa explained.

“I see.” I simply nodded.

There is no way to check if whatever she said was true. But, if I assume that

they are spies, what can they do? Because the thing which should be concealed is inside me. Even if they investigate the town, there is nothing to be exposed. For that reason, I should treat them as normal merchants.

“I understand. I will treat you as merchants after this.” I told them.

“You really are an honest person, huh?” Elsa smiled pleasantly. Combined with her red hair, it gave off a warm impression, just like a sunshine.

“Then, let’s move on to the main act.” I take out the tray which I had placed behind me.

I removed the lid of the vessel in the middle of the tray. What was inside was a white powder.

“Do you know what this is?” I asked them.

“What is this? Is this white powder... Salt?” Elsa answered unsurely.

“That means you don’t know.” I smiled.

Elsa thought that this white powder was salt, but it was not. I laughed inside my mind when she asked if this was salt.

“Even though it is a little bit crude, please try to scoop it with your finger and lick it.” I requested.

Elsa scoop the white powder with her middle finger, and brought it to her mouth. Probably because she thought it would be salty, she tightened her front lips as she licked her finger. But, her guess missed big time.

And then, she finished licking everything from her fingertip in no time.

At that moment...

“Eh!? Wh... Wha... What is this?! Sweet! It’s sweet!” Elsa’s eyes became perfectly round as she raised her voice in surprise.

That’s right, it’s sweet. Because Elsa’s voice was too loud, I could hear the sound of people climbing the stairs from below.

“Fujiwara-Sama!” The sliding door opened without ceremony as the people from the wolf tribe called my name worriedly.

“There is no problem. Please continue to stand by downstairs.” I ordered.

The man from the wolf tribe looked around swiftly. When he confirmed that there was nothing out of the ordinary, he answered replied in affirmative and left.

Elsa was still surprised, and her shoulders were shaking.

“It is called sugar.” I told her.

“Sugar...” While she muttered absentmindedly, Elsa scooped the sugar with her finger, and brought it to her mouth again.

While watching this, I thought that it was reasonable for her to be surprised. In my previous world, the origin of [Sugar] was from Asia. To go there, they need to struggle to cross the desert or the sea. Don’t even talk about sailing; in this world, they don’t even know about anything beyond the desert, so there is no way there is sugar here.

“Congratulations. In this world except me, you are the first human being who has eaten sugar, Elsa-san.” I laughed.

The woman who ate sugar for the first time - Elsa. Ah, I feel like the people in the future generations will name a food after this name.

Then, I could hear a small hint of laughter that gradually became louder coming from Elsa.

“Good! Good!” Elsa stood up and shouted to the ceiling.

Immediately, she sat in seiza, and placed her head onto the tatami.

“Fujiwara-san! This thing! Please, sell this sugar to us! No matter how much it costs, we will pay it! With this, we will even be able to take over the world!” She begged.

From outside the room, I can hear the sound of people climbing the stairs again.

Chapter 028 - Merchant ③

Elsa had knelt down on the ground. The two swordsmen who were sitting at her sides were startled. The people from the wolf tribe who came up again after hearing a loud voice were blinking their eyes rapidly, as if not believing their eyes.

After I told the people from the wolf tribe that there was no problem, and asked them to withdraw, I said this to Elsa.

“Please raise your head. It’s alright, I will sell it.”

“Really? You will really sell it to us?” She gazed at me hopefully.

“Yeah. However, the goods I’m offering for sale isn’t only sugar.” I stated as I took the covers off from the two remaining vessels on the tray.

There were a red powder and a black powder there.

“I-I see... S-So it isn’t only sugar?!” She stared at the newly revealed powders, panting slightly.

“Please try to lick it.” I offered.

After gulping audibly, Elsa first scooped the red powder with her finger, and tasted it. When it touch her tongue, her mouth start to open and close rapidly, like a fish out of water.

“This... Is hot and spicy... I have never tasted anything like this..!” She managed to gasp out.

“This is chili pepper. It can warm the body.” I explained.

Elsa then scooped up the black powder with her finger once more, and proceeded to lick it.

“This... Should be salty? It’s salty like salt... But, the taste comes gradually..! I have never tasted anything like this before..!” Elsa exclaimed, her eyes wide.

“It is called black pepper. When you add it to the dish, it can enhance the food’s taste.”

“I see... Spices, huh?” Elsa muttered as she nodded slightly.

“I thought about selling crops, but as expected, the distance is too far. If it’s seeds, I don’t know what kind can be raised there. However, if it is a spice, it should be able to last long enough.” I explained my train of thought to her.

“Certainly. However, this is amazing. I already got shocked by the sugar, but to think that you would sell chili pepper and black pepper as well. At any rate, it will be able to expand the variety of dishes available. All those rich gourmets will surely loosen their wallets for this!” Elsa smiled widely.

[TL: the raw said their string purse]

“So the value will be a little inflated? At any rate, this is something only I can make. There should be no other people with this knowledge. Even if I say that this handful is worth the same weight in gold, I think that it isn’t an exaggeration.” I stated proudly.

The two swordsmen were dumbfounded when I said that it was worth its weight in gold. They made a face which expressed that they didn’t believe it.

Yes, I also can’t believe it too. But, in the middle ages of Europe back in my previous world, pepper was considered equal with the gold. However, I do not know whether this is true or not.

“...That’s right. Men with power will take out the money for the thing they desire. This is certainly worth its weight in gold.” Elsa mused aloud.

As expected of Elsa who’s a merchant. Unlike the two swordsmen, she knew the true value of the sugar and spices.

“Then, how much will you sell this to us? I am sorry to say, but we don’t have anything at hand since we didn’t know such amazing things would come out. Rather, this is truly dangerous. If we don’t handle it well, there might be a war between countries for this.” Elsa stated seriously.

War.

The two swordsmen were surprised at the words again, and trembled. But, my mind didn’t quail.

Well, I think that it’s true. Food is one of a few entertainments in this world. It

is because they don’t have anything to do that they devote themselves to research about the food. For the people who have too much gold in hand, they will surely use the gold. In other words, a large movement of gold. It will be enough reason for war to happen.

For the time being, there is the matter of Sandra Kingdom. They will send their military here again to make "sugar" and "spices" theirs if they find out about it.

“Please wait a minute!” All of a sudden, a loud voice interrupted me when I wanted to begin a conversation with Elsa. It was the swordswoman.

“What is it, Reina? You are just an escort. Please be silent.” Elsa glared at her fiercely.

“No, if you have an opinion about this, let’s hear it.” I stopped Elsa's reprimand.

You shouldn’t hurry in order to know what is inside the other party's belly.

Also, although Elsa may indeed be a merchant, I can’t deny the possibility that the two escorts were spies from another place.

“Fujiwara-san. You are a human, right?” Reina asked.

“Yes, I am a human.” I replied.

“Then, why you didn’t side with the humans, but sided with the beastmen instead?” She demanded.

So it’s finally here. How should I say it..? The root of this question seemed to be something emotional. She probably didn’t like that the beastmen were living a good life.

Certainly, when she heard about the night soil story, the life in this town seems to be much better than that of the humans' towns. And then, with the sugar and spices I showed just now, the town will get wealthier. If so, then the beastmen will live a much better life than now, was probably what Reina thought.

Now then, how should I answer it? The reason why I invited the beastmen at first was for the tax. But, now we get along peacefully, and I already have some feelings towards them.

Hmm... After some thinking over it some, I opened my mouth to reply.

"The beastmen are my irreplaceable family, friends, and also my comrades. To my family, friends and comrades, do I need any reason to help them?"

It has been decided. Perfect.

Then from other side of the sliding paper door, I can heard ‘uuu....’ sounds, as if someone was trying to endure something.

Oh? When I turned my sight to the door, I saw that it was slightly open.

Ah, that’s right. The people from the wolf tribe had already burst in several times till now. However, because nothing happened time and again, did they peep in quietly this time?

Uwaaa, this is so embarrassing.

“So why do you, as a human, regard beastmen as family—” Reina demanded once more.

“Stop messing around!” Elsa stopped Reina from continuing, completely furious. “We came for business! What you are saying isn’t related to business at all! Don’t try to investigate the important trade partner! what will you do if you

ruin the deal?!”

The roar almost sent shockwaves throughout the room.

“...I am sorry.” Reina hung her head and didn’t say anything else.

“I am really sorry. Reina had a very hard life till now. She doesn’t mean any harm at all. I will scold her later, so can you please forgive her for this?” Elsa lowered her head pleadingly.

I simply said that ‘I didn’t mind’, and the issue was over. Rather, I am more interested in Reina’s ‘hard life’ now.

“Then, let’s continue our talk. First, before we talk about the price, I want to provide a condition before making the deal.” I started off.

“Condition?” Elsa tilted her head to the side.

“Yes, I don’t want it to be leaked to other people that sugar and the spices were made here.” I elaborated.

“Well, that is natural. If people come to know that the origin of this gold tree is this town, various merchants and armies all over the world will rush over here. It means that it's possible that it will spread directly to the nobles. If I was to be the mediator for merchants from other countries... Yes, it's a very good deal for me. It's like an exclusive deal.” Elsa considered it carefully. “But, we won't be able to know how long we can deceive them. The time when the cat is out of the bag will come.

Putting my life at risk is too much, even for me. I will talk if there is nothing I can do.”

“If it's like that, then I don't mind. In any case, we have already invited resentment from Sandra Kingdom, so if you can't help it, it's alright to be honest to them.” I decided. “But when that happens, please tell them that no one other than I have any means to make it. And if you can, please propose sending a delegation to your lord, or even to your country. If the other party wants to adopt a means of diplomacy, you will serve as our mediator, and can profit from

it too.”

I don’t mind if this trade becomes the cause of attacks. At any rate, the enemy will come again. It will just be a little bit sooner.

If so, I will gather gold with every effort without restraint, and defeat the enemy with that gold.

Chapter 029 - Elsa, Reina, Ryle

After some time, the business discussion ended, and Nobuhide and the wolf tribesmen left the building.

After Elsa saw them off, she breathed out heavily, as if a huge load had been lifted from her shoulders. Then the next moment, unable to control it anymore, she burst into wild laughter.

The business talk with Nobuhide was a success. Not only that, the things Nobuhide presented were something outside of her expectations. In response to these unexpected items, Elsa was somehow able to demand a reduction in price. After all, if the value was too high, if anything goes wrong, she may become bankrupt immediately.

Nobuhide accepted the reduction in price positively too. But because the demand was accepted easily, Elsa was a bit overwhelmed. Well, there was not much of a difference since it's still a huge amount of money.

In addition, compared to what Nobuhide had presented, the funds which Elsa brought wasn't enough at all. However, should it be said that he’s generous or not? Saying just paid him later if the amount wasn’t enough. He gave her all the sugar and spices that he brought over.

“Now then, let’s return back to the room.” Elsa ordered the two swordsmen.

Reina was still discontented and continued to sulk after she had demanded an explanation from Nobuhide about helping the beastmen. Reina was still not convinced by his answer.

But, Elsa thought that it couldn’t be helped. Lyle and Reina were siblings. They were fallen nobles. They were innocent, but their parents had committed a sin. In this world, a parent’s sin was also their children’s sin. The only salvation was that they weren’t beheaded together.

These two have lost their social positions as they were demoted to commoners. Their fortune was also lost. They were nobles who don’t know how

the commoners live their life. Naturally, they were forced to live a harder life than other commoners.

“Reina.” When they returned to the room, Elsa called out her name.

“...What is it?” The swordswoman mumbled.

“It isn't that I don't understand your feelings. Regarding the kindness that Fujiwara-san has shown towards the beastmen... If it was showered onto humans... No, if it was given to you, your dream to revive your house would not just be a dream any more.” Elsa stated gently.

Upon hearing Elsa’s words, Reina cheeks were dyed red in embarrassment. Deep inside her heart, she was envious of the beastmen, and Elsa was able to guess it.

That was why Reina vented at Nobuhide, and asked the question she had

asked. However, the true words hiding inside Reina’s heart were different.

‘Don’t just help the beastmen. Please help my unfortunate self too...’ was what she had wanted to say.

“This world is unfair. The king, nobles, commoners, and people of a lower class... The moment you are born in this world, your social status has been decided for life. Even though I am a commoner, at the very least I was blessed to be born in the house of a merchant. Well, as you know, I can't inherit the store, so I ran away from home.” Elsa sighed.

Elsa was from the Youju Empire. It’s a country located in the lower part of the Dragon’s Jaw Continent. Born in the merchant’s house as the eldest child, but not the eldest son. Because she was unable to take over her family's business, she ran away from her home together with her younger sister. Then, while she was peddling, she reached the Kingdom of Sandra, and opened her own store there.

It was at that moment that she met the siblings Reina and Lyle. When both of them tried to rob Elsa, Elsa was able to convince them to work for her as escorts.

“Well, just say what you want to say, alright? I will step on everything and take what is at the top of the ladders from now on. There are countries where you can buy noble status if you have money. You guys also don't have to be escorts anymore. How about you guys also learn how to manage a business soon?” Elsa smiled at them.

Elsa laughed heartily because they only had to study to do that. If they still had lingering affections regarding their previous status, then they should grasp it with their own hands. That was what Elsa had meant.

“... Let me think about it for a while.” Reina lowered her head gloomily and left the room without waiting for Elsa’s answer.

“I am sorry, Elsa-san.” The one who apologized for Reina’s ignorance was her younger brother, Lyle.

“Don’t worry about it. Well, it is a good opportunity for Reina to break out

from her shell. Besides, I don't think I will have enough human resources I can trust from now on. I will also need your help, Lyle.” Elsa stated.

“Yes, I understand.” Lyle nodded his head.

Unlike his sister Reina, Lyle had already given up on his status as a noble already. So, in order to become a merchant in the future, he had been learning by watching Elsa till now. Elsa was aware of this as well.

“Come here for a little bit and look at outside of the window.” Elsa stopped near the window, and called Lyle over.

There were several hundreds of buildings lined evenly across the window, and the sound of the laughter of the beastmen children could be heard from everywhere.

“Don’t you think that this is wonderful?” Elsa asked offhandedly.

“That’s right.” Lyle replied.

To humans, beastmen were an existence that’s far different from them. However, when you look at them like this, both of them felt that there was no difference between humans and beastmen.

“...The talk just now... Will it be really okay?” Lyle asked timidly.

“Hmm? What is it?” Elsa turned to look at him.

“The war... Will it really happen?” He elaborated.

“It will certainly happen. First of all, our country will certainly start attacking

again. That's why, to prolong the time before the war is our job. The prolonged time will become our profit.” Elsa answered seriously.

“.....” Lyle wasn’t able to say anything.

War will happen in this peaceful town. When he thought like this, Lyle felt pain run through his chest.

He himself had fallen from being a noble to nothing, so he always thought about the relationship between people and status. If a king lost his country, he can just become an ordinary citizen. On the contrary, if a slave was able to catch ahold of a chance from heaven, depending on his path, he might be able to become a king, or so Lyle thought.

That’s right. In the past, there existed a person who eventually became the king of a large country despite his original position of a shepherd.

Lyle was a far-sighted person. That’s why he never had any disdain towards the beastmen, and only knew of the beastmen from his prior knowledge. But now, after looking at the life of the beastmen from the window, Lyle knew that there was no difference between humans and beastmen.

The beastmen live happily in this town, but their happiness may be destroyed by the war.

Once, Lyle didn't know anything, and was living happily with his family. Suddenly, everything fell apart. Now, in Lyle’s mind, he was thinking that the beastmen resembled the him of the past.

“Are you worried? About this town and the beastmen?” Elsa asked.

“Yes, well....” Lyle sighed.

“You are kind. But, I don’t dislike it. Frost-han also said that it was inevitable

for the Red Dragon Knights to lose. For example, look at this house.” Elsa and Lyle averted their eyes from the window, and paid more attention to their room. “The architecture style is totally different from anywhere else. It is splendid. Frost-han also said that this was made by Fujiwara-san for the beastmen.”

The technology wasn’t from this continent. Thus, it's natural to think that there was something else besides architecture

“It's not ordinary for hundreds, no, thousands of beastmen to follow only one human. Only Fujiwara-san is able to do something like this. Well, we should just think about what we can do. He seems to want to do business on top of understanding everything.” Elsa smiled.

“...That's right.” Lyle nodded quietly.

After their talk finished, Elsa sat down, and began to drink the alcohol that Nobuhide had left behind.

Lyle simply continued to look out of the window while hearing the happy voices of the children with a warm feeling permeating his chest.

◆

The night after the business negotiation finished…

At the house of Chief Jiharu, the people who had served as the guards of Nobuhide gathered.

“——then, Fujiwara-sama said this. ‘The beastmen are my irreplaceable family, friends, and comrades. Do you need a reason to help your family, friends, and comrades?’” One of the guards reported.

“Hmm...” After the guards finished their report, Chief Jiharu closed his eyes, deeply impressed.

The room became dead silent. They were even able to hear the voices of the orphans in another room clearly. Before long, Jiharu opened his eyes, and opened his mouth slowly.

“...Once again, tell me the words of Fujiwara-sama.” He commanded.

“Not again! We’ve already told you those words so many times!” The man from the wolf tribe complained.

That would be because they had already recited the line ‘because the beastmen were-’ more than ten times. To be told to repeat it so many times like a tape recorder, even the good-natured man of the wolf tribe became fed up.

“Isn’t that fine? It’s not like you are losing something.” Jiharu rolled his eyes.

“Tsk... This is really the last time. I will never say it again.” The man sighed.

But, even while complaining, he imitated the voice Nobuhide enthusiastically. The man seemed to like that line very much as well.

“Family, friends, and comrades... Those are good words. As expected of Fujiwara-sama. He is completely different from other humans.” When Jiharu heard the words which Nobuhide had spoken once again, he folded his arms while thinking deeply.

“So, what should we do? The problem is that Fujiwara-sama is talking about doing business with humans. The goods seem to be quite valuable among humans too. Moreover the humans will attack again! Don’t we need to advise Fujiwara-sama?” The man asked worriedly.

On the other hand, Jiharu shook his head and said that it wouldn’t be necessary.

“Fujiwara-sama was able to fend the human army by himself. Everyone should already know this. However, we need to prepare so that we can fight against the humans any time too. Severe punishment will be given to those who skip the training.” Jiharu looked at the man and scowled.

“Y-Yes...” As a man of the wolf tribe, he didn’t intent to skip training. But still, to be asked if he always put his spirit in his training or not... He can't deny it. When they were being stared and scowled at by Jiharu this way, their stomachs which originally didn’t have any pain seemed to scream sharply immediately.

“Now then, let's write the previous words onto paper and place it in various places.” Jiharu ordered.

“Oi, oi! Only the chiefs of the tribes and their kids are able to read!” One of the men reminded.

“Hmm, I guess that’s true.” Jiharu hummed, deep in thought.

Because he thought that it would be useful, Nobuhide taught Jiharu how to read. Of course it’s not Japanese, but the letters of this world.

The results gradually showed itself, and Jiharu recently became a teacher who taught the children how to read.

“Then, gather everyone tomorrow, Let’s convey the words of Fujiwara-sama to everyone!” Jiharu changed his orders.

“Oi, it can’t be that I have to recite it again...” The man complained.

“That’s right. You should feel honored.” Jiharu grinned.

After that, Jiharu let the children who came to learn how to read recite ‘this’ often, and Nobuhide, who came to the neighborhood by chance, blushed deeply.

Chapter 030 - Money

The day after Elsa's group came…

I have been working on packing the products since morning. With the wooden boxes made by the Goblin tribe, I placed jars of sugar and spices inside it, before filling the gaps with straw, and sealing it.

After Elsa and her guards loaded them into their carriage, they left the town in the afternoon.

Since they didn't have enough money, I had them write an IOU so that they can pay the leftover amount next time.

Well, it's not like the IOU has any significant meaning in this independent place. It will just become a record for the time being.

What's more problematic is Elsa's next visit. Elsa said that she will come back in 2 months at the earliest, and 4 months at the latest. She needs 10 days to return. In addition, she needs to contact other merchants from another country, and passing bribes to the church will need around 40 — 60 days, To come back here, she will need another 10–40 days. Thus, in total, this will take around 2–4 months.

Although the number of days to return back here is about 10–40 days, it is kind of vague since they need to lose their pursuers.

"We will certainly be tailed. In order for this place to remain unknown, we need to go in the opposite direction. So, it will take time." Elsa explained. "Ah, if there is no news after half a year has passed, we have probably already departed to heaven. You'll have to be patient…"

Elsa said something like this while laughing… I think that she is an unusually

brave woman.

Anyway, it takes too many days! Elsa said if she was able to prepare the staff and gold, and organize a unit to transport it, it would be possible to trade more frequently.

However, forget about the money. She doesn't even know how long until the system can be set in place since the staff have to be carefully investigated first.

As I need to save as much gold as possible until the upcoming war, I need to do something.

Now, after seeing off Elsa's group, I sat down and slid my feet into the kotatsu at home. In front of me was a leather bag full of gold coins. I took one out from the bag, and placed it on the desk.

It's called the Furoo gold coin, and it has the same size as a one yen coin. It has a high gold content, and so far, the ratio has never changed, so the value of this coin is stable. It seems to be used as an international currency.

The gold content is 90%, and its weight is around 3.5 grams. Because the price of 1 gram of gold is around 4000 yen in modern times, one piece of Furoo gold coin would be about…

3.5 X 4000 X 9/10 = 12,600 yen.

It should be something like that.

But, when I summoned 'Town Data', and chose to sell it, it became something like this.

[Furoo Gold Coin] [Sold Value] 110,000 yen

《Do you want to sell it?》[Yes/No]

The sale value was nearly 9 times over!

The [selling value] is the value of the item in this world. Aside from that, this gold coin has a value that can let a peasant family live for 1 year with just 20 gold coins.

Anyway, it's funny that the selling price is not according to modern value. But, it will be very beneficial for my funds.

I selected 150 gold coins in the bag and [sold] them.

[Furoo Gold Coin] [148 pieces] [Sale Value] 16,280,000 yen

[Furoo Gold Coin (Counterfeit)] [Sale Value] 90,000 yen

[Furoo Gold Coin (Counterfeit)] [Sale Value] 84,000 yen

《Do you want to sell it?》[Yes/No]

Hmm..? Eh?

I thought my eyes had misread the words somehow, so I looked at the screen in front of my eyes again.

No, there wasn't a mistake.

Oi, Elsa! There are imitations mixed inside!

Well, since there's only 2 out of 150 pieces, I don't think it's on purpose. Before the deal, Elza did said that since it was a tentative trade, she chose proper gold coins piece by piece.

Maybe the fact that two counterfeit gold coins were mixed in with the others is normal in this world. When it comes to this, in the end, I wonder how do they handle the counterfeit gold coins?

Let's ask Elsa the next time when she comes by.

For now, I completed the sale of the gold coins. I am looking forward to how much money Elsa will bring next time.

After winter is over…

Elsa came to the town with many people. That group consisted of soldiers who guarded the gold on the carriage.

Well, since I have been told last time that they will visit in greater numbers, I am not that surprised.

But, I refrained from letting the humans into the town for our mutual safety. Although Elsa said that they are trustworthy people, this much is unavoidable.

That is why only Elsa and Reina, who came last time (Lyle doesn't come), were allowed inside the town. As for the rest, I decided to let them stay at a brick house that was newly built by the Kobold tribe in the west.

By the way, the ceiling of this brick house was built with thin plywood and straw, so even if an earthquake occurred and the house collapsed, no one would die.

"Fujiwara-san, is the rate the same as the last time?" Elsa asked as we made way to the vacant shop they used before.

"Yes. I don't mind." I replied casually.

"How much do you have? This time, we would like a large quantity of black pepper." She requested.

"We have prepared enough of sugar, black pepper, and chilli pepper to fill your carriage." I stated proudly.

"Then I am relieved." She grinned.

A little after we arrived at the store, the operation to carry the gold coins into the house started. When it's over, we can then proceed onto the next transaction since the amount she owed us was finally paid.

"Then, please confirm the number of coins. There are 500 gold coins inside each bag." Elsa reported.

There are 150 bags with 500 gold coins in each. There is no way to calculate all of these at one go. I picked one of the bags and arranged the gold coins onto the desk so that Elsa and Reina can see and count them.

"Alright, there is no problem. Next is this." I stated as I grabbed the scale.

The scale is used to measure the authenticity of the gold coins.

"We will choose 5 pieces from one bag and weigh them. Let's do this quickly since it will get dark soon." After I said that, I placed the gold coins onto the scale.

While doing that, I opened my mouth to ask about the counterfeit gold coins.

"By the way, I have something I wanted to ask."

"What is it? As long as I can answer it, no matter if it is ten or one hundred questions, I will answer. Ah, but the three size are a no no!" She winked at me.

"No, I am not interested in your three sizes." I replied quickly.

"…Fujiwara-san, it's okay to be a little more carried away." Elsa's eyes suddenly became cold.

[TL: YOU FOOL!]

Eeh..? What did I do wrong?

"I am sorry, but this is about something serious." I apologised without

knowing why.

“Mu…” Elsa pursed her lips as her expression became serious.

Even though she usually has a rather laidback appearance, when we start talking about business, she becomes like this sometimes.

“There were two gold coins with low gold ratios mixed in last time. They were obviously counterfeit gold coins.” I recounted.

“…Haa…” Elsa sighed as if she was exhausted.

What? Did I say something strange?

“Did I say something strange?” I asked.

“When you get something like that, then it’s a ‘hit.’” She stated.

“A ‘hit’?” I repeated after her.

“That’s right. You chose a random gold coin and weighed it just now right?” She asked.

“Yeah.” I nodded.

“There is a rule that at the time of trading, choose one piece from the 100 pieces and weigh it. If it is is a counterfeit, weigh another 5 pieces next. If there is a counterfeit again this time, weigh 10 next. If there is another counterfeit in the middle of weighing, the side receiving the gold will be given the right to check all of the gold.” Elsa explained clearly.

“Haa.” I gave a half hearted reply while thinking that this was such a troublesome rule.

Isn’t it like a rule to not let you discover false gold coins at all?

“Why does it give more advantage to the paying side? …Or rather, do they pretend not to see the small number of counterfeit gold coins?” I questioned.

“No, unfortunately.” Was Elsa’s short reply.

I do not understand.

‘Bad money drives out good money.’ I have heard this saying in the previous world.

Bad money and good money… Even though they have the same monetary value, since precious metal is much more expensive, people will hide the good money and let the bad money circulate around the world. This means that the value of the money will drop, which would lead to the collapse of the monetary economy.

“It’s simple. The person who is able to make counterfeit money is a mint right holder. In other words, people who hold great power in the country. To be specific, it could be a grand duke, influential feudal lords, the archbishop, or some bishops. These people were delegated to manage the foundry by the king. In other words, the problem of counterfeit money is, more or less, to be crushed by people who care about it.” Elsa elaborated.

“I see.” I nodded listlessly.

In other words, if you try to intervene with this problem, it will result in bringing harm to oneself. Such decisions were made so that the problem will not become bigger.

But, is the monetary economy of this world alright?

I mean, the rule doesn’t apply when dealing with me…

“There is still something worse than this. There is a country where the use of scales for business is prohibited. They even give awful excuses, like ‘the business that weighs the coinage is synonymous with the business of metal. Because it will damage the value of money, therefore it is prohibited.’ Lowering the gold ratio of their own coinage, isn’t it the same as dropping their value of money? It’s messed up, right?” She complained.

The metal, before being processed into coinage, is pure gold. Indeed, if you trade by weighing it, you won’t need coinage anymore, so their reason is

acceptable. But, we also need to know the ratio of the gold of the coin, so the argument will never end.

“Well, that country’s economy was destroyed, and now, only foreign currency and barter trade are being used. That is quite an old story. That is why the people who own foundries only made a slight adjustment to the quantity to the degree that it can be overlooked by the odd rule. In the end, the king overlooked it. But, if they go overboard, then the king will do ‘this’.” Elsa mimed the slicing of her neck and stuck her tongue out when she said ‘this’.

“Still, if enough dust builds up, it will become a mountain. When that happens, the one that will get sore eyes are the merchants. That rule. If you find more than 30 counterfeit coins from the buyer after you examine them, on top of being investigated by the authorities, they will be forced to forfeit their entire fortune. That is why everyone only gives out counterfeit money little by little. Even so, if you accumulate a lot of it, you will lose some money, but the government officials will buy it back at a reasonable price.” Elsa stated.

That means you knew about the counterfeit gold coins.

“Well, even though I said a lot of things, it is common for one or two bad coins to be mixed in, and it is customary to pretend to not realize it when you find out later. That is why merchants call it a ‘hit’. There is no doubt that it is a loss, but at least you can comfort yourself by thinking you won the lottery.” She laughed lightly.

While thinking ‘I see’, I began moving my hand which had stopped from a while ago.

“Also, if you are a first class merchant, even without using a scale, you will know its weight even if you only use your hands. For a suspicious person, you can choose one coin and weigh it on the scale afterwards.” She explained further with a slightly shy smile.

Before long, I have finished weighing the 5 pieces of coins on the scale, and I also received the order slip for this transaction from Elsa. This time, sugar and chili pepper were in small quantities, while black pepper was requested in large quantities instead.

Apparently, the reason for sugar was to not intrude upon the production of honey, which was under monastery control. As for chilli pepper, although it is not unpopular, it seems like there is more demand for black pepper.

Thus, there is something I am curious about. Even though they knew about the honey, why did they still take a large amount of sugar last time?

Elsa explained it like this.

“Sugar is to sell our name. Sweet things are the easiest to sell due to its taste, and it’s popular. On the other hand, black pepper and chili pepper are the first of their kind right? Because I’ve never tasted them before, I was startled by their prices. Therefore, [sugar] is actually really helpful. The people who bought sugar were some amazing people that have not seen something like spices until now. So, they did not mind about something with an absurd price. Well, even with such a thing, there are a lot of rich people who starve for an unknown taste, if you know what I mean.”

After thinking and discussing about various things, we finished the transaction on that day. After loading the gold onto the Riyaka, I asked the people of the Wolf tribe to transport it to my house.

At night, we served some sake and meals for Elsa’s group, and organised a small banquet.

“Ahh, that hit the spot! Those guys who always look so self-important. Why are they now rubbing their hands and speaking with polite language?

I wanted to show that to Fujiwara-san!” Elsa seemed to be in a considerably good mood as she said that.

From her story, it seems like the position of the opponent she despised so far, and hers, had changed completely. Well, she is the only one with sugar and spices after all, so for other merchants, it’s something like giving them a Koumon-sama seal.

[TL: Koumon-sama is a character from drama mito Koumon where the old man travel around japan hiding his identity, at the end of the show he will always show his seals and all the villain will run away like a straight man being chased by drag queen *no LGBTsmn intended]

“Umm, did your actions make a lot of enemies..?” I asked hesitantly.

I would be troubled if a strange grudge was created, and they stupidly come here for revenge. Also, if something happens to Elsa, it will hinder her business with me.

“I understand. I will say it now. I properly put on a mask when I talk formally with other people. I disregard my feelings while trading in consideration of the profit and loss. We are professionals after all.” She declared.

In other words, she hides her feelings, and only shows her true self here. Does Elsa trust me this much, or is this one of the masks that she’s put on right now?

The next day, Elsa received the goods, and left the town. After seeing her off, I smiled a little.

The money I gained this time round is approximately 76,000 gold coins. The total weight is around 230 kilograms.

I already [sold] all of them last night, and it came to total amount of 8.4 billion yen.

[Funds] 49,881,122,000 yen → 58,313,170,000 yen.

I can't stop grinning on my way home while being jolted around by Catherine. It's exactly like how it felt so good to see the money accumulating in the bankbook back in the original world.

Gold has the charm of the devil.

Even a slight decrease and increase will shake one's heart.

I often killed time by counting the money in my wallet when I was a child. However, with 76,000 gold disappearing from this world, I am worried that the currency market of the human world will be negatively affected.

Well, it can't be helped now. I will ask about it next time Elsa drops by.

Anyway, with this, my funds are about 58 billion yen. Because I made a decision that the minimum amount of funds should be at least 50 billion, I can finally be a little bit unreasonable now that I have excess funds.

Chapter 031 - Artillery

The warm spring arrived. Three years have passed since I arrived to this world. The fourth year has just begun, and as expected, I still did not feel any deep emotions.

If something were to happen, would it be during the tenth year?

Regardless, there are more constructive things to do right in front of my eyes rather than wallowing in this homesickness that doesn't produce anything.

"Slowly! It is better to go slow! Please lift it carefully!" I instructed the beastmen at the north gate.

On top of the stone walls, the beastmen who were proud of their strength were pulling a long and narrow bronze pipe suspended by ropes.

The length of the bronze pipe is about 1 meter, and its weight is close to 100 kilos.

The bronze pipe is being carried towards its base located on top of the stone walls. When the two are combined, the thing will be fully assembled.

After it has been settled onto its base on the stone walls, I knocked it gently.

"Alright. It is splendid." I smiled.

There was a sense of nostalgia when I looked upon the completed product.

In Japan, the [Mountain Cannon] is called 'cannon', and played an active role from the late Edo period to the early Meiji period.

[TL: the name is actually this 四斤山砲 and when I search what the cannon

name is called I got the name of Canon de montagne de 4 La Hitte, however I change it to Mountain Cannon after discussed with an acquaintance from France.]

[Mountain Cannon] 130 million yen.

The problem with the upcoming war against the Kingdom of Sandra was what should be done before the enemy's troops attach themselves onto the stone walls.

If they manage to gain control of the walls, due to the scale of the struggle over it, the end result will gradually worsen. In other words, it is important to attack the enemy from a distance before they reach the walls.

At first, he thought about crossbow and gun units. However, crossbows were not on the list of Edo period products, and regarding guns, I was hesitant to hand over firearms, which are considered overpowered here, to an individual. Also, if the guns fall into enemy hands during the war, and they research about it, it might be pointed back at me.

That is why I chose this [Mountain Cannon]. Its maximum range is 2600 meters, and in addition, this is a heavy object, so it will not be easy for the enemy to take it away. Even if it was stolen, they will definitely have trouble carrying it.

I can [sell] any of my possessions in the town, as well as any possessions near me. So, while the enemy struggles to transport the cannon, I can just [sell] it.

Now then, the beastmen are waiting for my instructions. Today, I have gathered them to teach them how to handle this cannon. Let's start quickly.

There is no convenient instruction manual for the [Mountain Cannon], unfortunately. But, I have read a series of books which discussed about this [Mountain Cannon], so I have already tried and tested it at the back of the town.

“Ahem, this is called a cannon. Well, please look at what it actually does.” I decided to give a demonstration while explaining about it.

First, I cleaned the inside of the cannon with a cannon sponge that’s as long as my body. Next, I put the cartridge bag to the front, and pushed it inside with a rammer. Then, I loaded the cannonball.

The cannonball is a long, high-explosive projectile that weighs around 4 kg.

Also, there is a preloading method, but a shell matching the helical groove of the rifling of the cannon must be used.

I adjusted the shell to match the rifling, and pushed the cannonball inside with a stick.

“Now then, everyone, please move away a little bit, and cover your ears.” I requested.

Everyone moved away from their spot, and covered their ears. Since their ears are on top of their heads, except for the Goblin and Kobold tribes, their appearance when covering their ears are quite comical.

[TL: I am guessing about how they looks like criminal being apprehended by police.]

I checked the rear bottom of stone wall. It is necessary in case the cannon falls off the stone wall due to the recoil. Well, no one should be there anyway because I have told them not to approach this place.

Next, using a long needle, I stab the cartridge bag via the priming hole at the back of the cannon. After installing the fuse there, I ignited it from slightly remote position. The fuse lit up and eventually reached the priming hole.

The explosion roared out almost instantaneously.

The cannon barrel spat out white smoke over the sky. Then, the sound of a heavy object landing far away resounded, and a cloud of dust arose from its landing spot.

Cheers erupted from the beastmen.

“Incredible!” One of them yelled.

“Even humans can’t do anything to it with that range!” Another exclaimed smugly.

There was only praise and no surprise from seeing this for the first time. The reason was because they probably peeped during the test firing at the back of the town.

“Well then, I will have everyone try do it.” I declared.

First is to select artillerymen from each tribe and train them thoroughly. In particular, they have to remember the landing distance of the cannonball, as well as the elevation angle.

After that, we installed several mountain cannons at the north, east and west walls. With this, the town’s defence became more solid.

At the end of April, we held a banquet in celebration of the 4th anniversary of the town. Everyone surrounded the bonfire, drink good liquor, and eat delicious food. Because we have more money, both the liquor and the meat is of much better quality than usual.

Some tribespeople started to sing after they become drunk from the liquor. It’s probably a song handed down within the tribe. Though I have never heard this song before, it gave me a mysterious sense of nostalgia.

When the song was over, another tribe started singing. When someone started to clap, everyone imitated it and clapped their hands to the rhythm of the song.

I, who was sitting quietly at the corner drinking liquor, started to clap with them.

It is peaceful, I thought.

Suddenly, I saw children carry food into the town. Were they carrying it to their pregnant mother, or is it being taken to the mother who can't leave their infant behind?

A lot of children are being born in the town. The number of residents will increase steadily from now on. This is also because of peace.

"Fujiwara-sama." Chief Jiharu appeared with a bottle of wine.

Because I don't like to think at banquets, I told them to treat me like air, but it seems like he had come all this way just to pour some alcohol for me.

After we exchanged some small talk and liquor, Jiharu returned back to his tribe.

Following Jiharu, the other chieftains come along one by one with sake as well.

This is unbearable. I glared at Jiharu, who lowered his head slightly while looking apologetic.

The feast and liquor was also sent to the prisoner of war, Romatto. Later on, I heard from the guard that Romatto misunderstood this feast as his last supper, and began to beg for his life in tears. But, after he drank the liquor, his attitude completely changed, and he began shouting furiously.

"Just kill me if you want to!" He had roared loudly.

It was his usual self.

“Let’s do our best from tomorrow onwards!” Before long, I concluded the feast with this sentence and ended the banquet.

Spring soon passed, and when summer began, the merchant group arrived once more. The one leading the group was Lyle.

On top of the stone walls around the gate, I asked him what happened to Elsa. He said that she became a decoy to deceive the merchants who were aiming for the source of the spices.

For the time being, I let Lyle and another two people into the town, and guided the others to the vacant house in the west. Of course, the people who are entering the town have been disarmed.

“Have you gained a some weight?” When I lead them to their lodging, I asked Lyle while atop Catherine.

The present Lyle seems to be slightly more plump than he was half a year ago.

“Ah, it’s because I don’t train with the sword anymore.” Lyle tugged his meaty cheeks while saying so wryly.

[TL:……. shit…… I need to exercise more…. Don’t want any meaty cheeks.]

[TLC : hahaha. Do the OPM menu then xD]

After that, while the sun was still high in the sky, I received the gold coins at usual store.

“From the next time onwards, I think we can come every month. Can you prepare the same amount each month?” Lyle asked after I confirmed the gold

coins.

“Yes. There is no problem with the supply.” I nodded.

Trading every month… I felt like dancing out from joy. If we can repeat the trade five more times..! In other words, after five months, the funds will reach the first 100 billion.

But, there are also some concerns and that is, how much gold does this continent have?

I have [sold] several hundred kilograms of gold coins. This means that a large amount of [gold] has disappeared from this world. And unfortunately, there is no [gold] in the item column in the Town Data. So, the [gold] that has disappeared from this world will never come back.

If I continue to [sell] gold like this, then [gold] will gradually disappear from this continent. I feel like that the market will be greatly unbalanced. Something like that could happen.

To be frank, I don’t know how much unbalance and instability will be created. Maybe the gold coins coming into this town might be seen as insignificant if we look at the big picture, because I have heard that the citizens usually only use silver coins, so even if there are no more gold coins, as long as there are still silver coins, it will be alright. At least, that was what I thought.

“About the gold coins, will there be any problems with the market if I hoard them?” I asked Lyle to assuage my concerns.

Upon hearing that question, Lyle placed his hand on his chin and thought for a while.

“Well… The market reaction is still dull for now. But, if the gold coins continue to flow into this town as it is, their value will increase soon.” He replied.

“As I thought…” I muttered softly.

Well, isn’t this natural? At any rate, including the gold coins from today’s trade, nearly 20 billion in modern value has been brought into this town.

“When there are no gold coins, the demand for silver coins will increase. But, the value of silver coins has been falling for a while now, so it might still be alright.” Lyle shrugged.

“The value of silver is falling?” I asked.

“Yes. Apparently, a huge silver mine was found about 2 years ago in the Kingdom of Castile, leading to the production of the new Barbanil silver coin. It takes pride in its 92.5% silver content, and any other imitation is not allowed.” Lyle explained the situation.

The Kingdom of Castile should be one of the countries in the north. That country found a silver mine, and issued new, high quality silver coins. But, will the value value of silver be so easily being shaken by such a thing? I wonder…

“The scary thing is that the new Barbanil silver coins have been supplied continuously to the market for the last 2 years, so it has been continuously lowering the value of other silver coins.” Lyle continued.

“Eh..? Doesn’t that mean that the bad money is being driven away by the good money..?” I questioned, confused.

“If you define silver coins of another country with lower a silver ratio than the new Barbanil silver coins as bad money, then that’s exactly how it is.” Lyle answered nonchalantly.

Was it not bad money being driven out by good money? No, that new silver coin, does it really have that amount of silver in it?

“What happened afterwards?” I queried.

“The new Barbanil silver coins have become first class silver coins now, and despite its high silver ratio, it has the same value as other silver coins two years

ago. Meanwhile, the value of other silver coins has fallen ⅔ from the past. Even if the prices goes up, the wages of the citizens will not rise, and the lives of people outside of the Kingdom of Castile will be harder." Lyle sighed.

Rapid inflation… The value of silver coins will decline, and the citizens who are receiving the wages with their own country's silver coin can't bear it. No, is there even a limit on the silver?

"Despite the huge silver mine, with so much mining, does the silver not run out?" I questioned.

"Haha. Is it really a silver mine?" Lyle only laughed sardonically.

"Eh?" My eyes widened.

"It's alchemy. For the past two years, I heard that there was no one who could identify the silver mine's location. Since there are no places like a silver mine there, then wouldn't this be due to the presence of a genius alchemist who can produce a lot of silver?" Lyle whispered to me conspiratorially.

"Eh, alchemy is metal magic, right? Can they also produce metal?" I asked.

Alchemy… I saw [Metal Magic Talent] from the card given by god. From the story of the Goblin and Kobold Tribes, it is said that there is a magic that can transform metals. For that reason, those with that magic will take up jobs like blacksmithing.

"Yes, they can produce it. Well, it is reasonable to not know about it. People who can produce metal by magic are top rank alchemists. Their existence is a top secret of a country. They are chickens that lay golden eggs while being kept inside iron cages. The people in the market are only low ranked alchemists." Lyle explained.

"Then, why silver instead of gold? Wouldn't it be more profitable to produce gold?" I could not understand that point.

"That is because silver is much easier to produce. Do you know about the

Triangle of God?” He nodded sagely.

“I am sorry, but could you tell me about it?” I requested.

“When god created this world, it gave birth to one law — the Triangle of God. It represents the categories of living things and substances, a law that can’t be defied. For example, at the ecological level, humans are on top, and the beastmen and carnivorous animals is lined below them. Further below would be herbivores, grass and trees, and then earth. The numbers on top are smaller, and as it goes further down, the number increases, forming a triangular shape.” Lyle explained patiently. “There is also a ranking for minerals, with diamonds at the top, and other minerals forming a line at the bottom. Silver is considered a high-ranking existence because it is difficult to produce, and God made only a few of them. Of course, it goes without saying that gold ranks higher than silver, and is thus, rarer and more difficult to produce than silver. This is providence of the world. This is taught first when you learn theology. Well, I don’t know how much of it is true though.”

“I see.” I nodded.

This is like an ecological pyramid.

Still the silver mine was found two years ago, and I arrived here three years ago. Isn’t this story too good to be true?

【Metal magic talent】【Extra large】【★★★★★★】

Maybe, someone managed to get this card and he was found by the authorities while producing silver for a living? It certainly seems possible.

A bird in a cage, huh? I do not know whether that is a good thing or a bad thing. At the very least, I will consider this a serious matter.

“I am a little bit interested in why the Kingdom of Castile didn’t buy gold coins using their abundant silver coins.” I asked.

“The merchants aren’t so stupid. Why do you think Elsa has been dealing with

gold coins until now?” Lyle snorted.

“Er…” I mumbled.

“First, the Kingdom of Castile paid its huge debt to other country with the new silver coins. The merchants were suspicious about this. Where did the silver come from? After this, most of the merchants ceased the use of silver coins in big businesses. Nonetheless, some merchants remain defiant against the trend, and used the new Barbanil silver coins because the Kingdom of Castile is planning to donate the new Barbanil silver coins to the church, so the new Barbanil silver coins will continue to increase in the market.” Lyle elaborated.

“Do you have the new Barbanil silver coins with you now?” I asked.

“Yes, I do have it.” He nodded.

I removed a gold coin from the bag I received earlier.

“Would you please exchange it with this gold coin?” I requested.

“I don’t mind in particular…” He shrugged and took out a bag from his breast pocket, and handed 38 silver coins to me.

I put them into the gold coin bag carefully. Let’s examine its [value] when I return back home. If the silver coins are overflowing in numbers, then it might not be necessary to stick with gold coins for trading.

Chapter 032 - Footsteps of Battle ①

The next day, Ryle received the merchandise, took the merchant corps with him, and left. This time, there was an agreement that the next transaction will be done with the new Barbanil silver coins.

[New Barbanil Silver Coin] [Sale Price] 2800 yen.

After that, three months passed by swiftly. The trade with the Polo firm represented by Elsa had gone smoothly without any problems. The gold, gold, and gold were gathered in my pocket, and the funds on 'town data' were accumulating like a gushing hot spring.

With this, my everyday life became a little bit "rich". Recently, I have been spending it on gourmet food.

The finest marbled beef. As I take a bite of the meat that was covered with special steak sauce, I could feel the soft texture of the meat, as well as the meat juice spreading inside my mouth. I was enveloped in unspeakable happiness.

[TL: please not another Death March.]

[TLC: well everyone loves food, delicious food. Who doesn't anyway lol.]

It melted like the fat under-belly of a tuna in the mouth. Knowing that this was the first time I was able to taste that melting sensation of fatty tuna upon arriving to this world… It was a complicated feeling.

Other than that, there were other delicacies such as sea urchin, abalone, caviar, crab, natural eel, matsutake mushroom, and more that I could never taste in my previous world. I was finally able to taste them now.

Sometimes, I go to Jiharu's house and use high quality ingredients to make a dish there. His eyes would usually become round because of the deliciousness. Conversely, when he sometimes tried to control his reaction to something he disliked, his expression was pretty interesting to see. Again, this is one of my

small entertainments left in life.

Life without inconvenience, and luxury meals… It can be said that I was living a completely blessed life here as compared to my previous world.

Now then, even though it is okay to eat delicious food, I can't be distracted by it. I also spent money on military aspects. First of all, I bought an armored vehicle for my safety.

[Type 96 Armored Personnel Carrier] 13 billion yen (List Price 130 million yen)

It's a new generation vehicle with a proper bullet proof windshield, automatic specification, and air conditioning. Although it's a little bit cramped, it can't be helped if it is for my safety. Anyway, with this, it will be fine even if i get shot by arrows at close range.

Besides the armored vehicle, I also purchased the [Type 73 heavy-duty truck] and trained up several drivers. As of now, the people that were undergoing training were several people from the Wolf Tribe. In case of an emergency that requires me to use the armored vehicle, there might be a need for them to use the truck so that they can follow behind.

There is a limit to what I can do by myself after all. It is not bad to increase the number of hands available in case of trouble.

In addition, I placed a great number of rifled mountain guns at each wall, and I also gave armors such as the foot soldier armor to the beastmen. The sight of beastmen wearing Japanese armor atop the stone walls reminded me of the Sengoku Era.

That is roughly everything I've changed regarding the military in this place. Besides military affairs, I also wanted to spend money to expand the town, but I have never exposed my ability in public. Since the beastmen will be suspicious about the materials that appear out from nowhere, I should decide on a cover

story for my ability soon.

Once, the Kobold tribe asked about what I had done with the wood. When I refused to answer, they never asked again. I need to be careful about this.

Anyway, my ability is a trump card and should only be used as a last resort. That is why I can't show it to anyone.

…Then summer and autumn passed, and winter arrived.

One day during winter, uninvited visitors appeared from the north. Looking at the cloud of smoke, it was obviously an army.

Immediately the town shifted into combat mode. Presently, I was staring at the army that was marching towards the north gate.

"Fujiwara-sama, please give orders to prepare the cannons!" The gunners of each castle wall cried out as they gathered at the north gate.

"…Unload the shells from the truck! Gunners will receive the ammunition! However, don't uncover the cannon until I give the signal!" I ordered after a little hesitation.

I had installed 8 mountain cannons at each gate in the north, east and west. They were usually covered, and the shells and cartridge bags were only distributed when something happens.

Descending from the stone walls, everyone started unloading the ammunition from the carrier truck. When that is over, I went up to the top of stone walls again to continue my observation of the northern army.

Eventually, the army stopped. Looking through the binoculars, I could see a rather familiar Red Dragon flag hovering above them.

“The Red Dragon Knight Order huh.” I muttered.

They stopped several kilometers away from here, a distance where the cannon may or may not be able to target judging from the last cannon test. Anyway, it’s fine since the enemy won’t be able to measure how far the attack range is.

Then, four horsemen emerged from their ranks. Two of the riders don’t wear any armor, and one of them was a woman with bright red hair — it’s Elsa.

(So that is the reason…)

The other person without armor should be a diplomat.

I have asked Elsa of it before after all. In case the trade was found out by the country, please propose for them to send out a diplomat.

The army was sent out probably so that they would be able to carry out favorable negotiations through their threatening position. However, the location where they decided to stop at was the evidence that they were still afraid of us.

“Fujiwara-san, it is me! Don’t attack!” Elsa, who was taking the lead out of the four horsemen, gave a desperate cry.

“Everyone, absolutely don’t attack!” I ordered the bowmen sternly.

Afterwards, the unarmed man shouted to us.

“I am called Ignats Braunitze! I am a diplomat from the Kingdom of Sandra! I want to talk with the head of the town, Fujiwara!”

His brown hair was divided in the ratio of 7:3, and he also had a rather bushy

moustache.

“I am Fujiwara!” I announced loudly.

“So you are Fujiwara! Let’s settle down and talk!” He yelled back.

“Then you guys will need unmount from your horses and place your weapons on the ground!” I would give no quarter on this.

Except for Elsa, the three of them, including Braunitze, had a hushed discussion regarding my request. Then, the 4 unmounted from their horses and placed their swords onto the ground.

“Well then, you may enter after the gate opens.” I declared.

“Wait! We wish for the discussion to be held outside of the town!” Braunitze suggested.

Do they have some kind of plan? However, I also thought that there was nothing wrong with tha.

“Would the front of gate be good enough?” I asked.

“It’s good!” The diplomat accepted my offer.

“Then, wait a while!” I returned to my house with a truck and got 4 pipe chairs before heading to the north gate again.

Chief Jiharu will accompany me, along with two more people from the Wolf Tribe. On top of the stone walls, the beastmen had their bows readied vigilantly.

Then, the gate opened.

As I set up the pipe chair, Braunitze had a slightly surprised face when he look on the folding chair. Jiharu was sitting with me while Braunitze and Elsa sat in front of me. The other two from the Wolf Tribe stood behind me, while behind Braunitze were two knights just a slight distance away.

“Let’s speak frankly. Join our country. If you pay a tax, this place will remain as it is.” Braunitze opened his mouth first, saying arrogant words with an arrogant attitude.

Compared to the Kingdom of Sandra, my town is at most just this one city. Considering the differences, it is natural.

“I refuse.” I replied curtly.

My answer was obviously no. It was obvious that they will suck us dry. If I didn’t have the beastmen, I would be attracted with that story, but now, I need to protect the lives of the beastmen. Of course, the top priority would still be my life.

“You will also be able to get the title of nobility too, you know?” He tried to tempt me.

“There is no meaning for something like peerage in this land.” I answered without hesitating.

“Can’t you see the soldiers in the back?” Braunitze decided to try threatening us instead.

“If you are talking about routing us, how about I show you how we can smash your army again?”

“Hmm…” Braunitze looked into my eyes intently.

I was startled. Of course, it isn’t in a strange manner, but Braunitze’s eyes seemed to look directly into my mind. I guess this is what you call a professional diplomat.

[ED: Are you sure that it’s not some mind reading magic thing?]

Elsa can also be said to be a pro in business, so she seems to have a keen understanding of what is happening here.

But, Braunitze doesn’t have it. Like a snake glaring at a frog, it is like he is observing from a high place. How to lure him in efficiently, it was a feeling like

that.

But, if I am to be a frog, I will be a very toxic frog. Because the Kingdom of Sandra is very far from this place, my overwhelming advantage doesn't change. That is why, having a determination to not back down, I glare back at Braunitze.

"…Alright, then let's talk about business." Diplomat Braunitze seemed to give up possessing this land, and changed the topic to business deals.

I thought that he might keep pressing about that taking over the land, so I am glad that he changed the topic.

First, I received explanations about future transactions. I am told that from now on, they want to take over our trade with the Polo firm lead by Elsa, and conduct a trade lead by the country instead. They wanted to use Elsa's sale network, so that if the country can get a profit publicly they can avert oppositions from other countries.

And as for the purchased goods, instead of increasing the amount of transaction, they are requesting a reduction in selling price. I could reject it separately, but I decided to accept the demand instead.

Since the value of this town was now known, it can be said that the clock hand has begun to move towards war. They will definitely not be satisfied with trade only. They will surely try to obtain this land by all means. That is why, even if it is only to delay it for a little bit, I intended to give some profit to the Kingdom of Sandra.

Besides that, when I was asked about the source of the resources of this land thoroughly, I remained silent.

Braunitze had looked at the beastmen's armor, and seemed very interested in iron in particular.

“There is one person being captured in a battle one year ago. His name is Romatto.” After the business discussion was finished, I brought up the prisoner who was being held at the inn.

Braunitze looked at the knight at the back.

“He ‘was’ the eldest son of the Bidenhulk house.” When the knight answered, Braunitze nodded his head as if saying ‘I see’, and looked at me again.

“That person will have to be returned back.” He stated.

“Only if you can give a reasonable amount of compensation.” I refuted.

“If you returned the prisoner, it will become a sign of goodwill for this friendship, no?” He stared at me.

“No. While it can be said to be a courtesy for friendship, even if one side tries to cling on tightly, it won’t change the master-servant relationship.” I replied firmly.

“Well, it’s okay. Then, let’s leave it as it is for now. It will be a problem for the family head.” Braunitze answered casually.

Thus the discussion ended.

The Kingdom of Sandra intended to conduct business from the beginning, so they have brought a large quantity of silver coins, and the items sold become twice that of the usual amount.

I talked a little bit with Elsa personally. First, she apologized for the trade being exposed to the country, but that was in the original agreement anyway. When I asked about the firm, she told me that although the profit will be lower than before, at least they will be much safer since it is backed by the country.

The Kingdom of Sandra’s army camped far away from the town and left on the next day. At night, there were humans spotted hanging around the farm, but when the beastmen shouted, they disappeared swiftly.

Really, one can’t be too careless when dealing with them.

Chapter 033 - Footsteps of Battle ②

Third Person POV

……

Imperial City of Sandoria, Kingdom of Sandra.

One day during winter, the Red Dragon Knight Order, who had been absent for a month, returned to the Imperial City of Sandoria. Although they claimed that they were patrolling the provinces, the truth was that they were sent to the beastmen town in the south.

And right now, at the King's throne, the diplomat, Braunitze, and the new captain of the Red Dragon Knight Order were kneeling before the king, reporting about the results of the expedition.

"Did you succeed in doing business with the beastman town?" The king asked.

"Yes, without any hindrance." Braunitze, who was the highest ranking officer of the expedition, replied.

"Well, this will make the country richer." The king smiled widely. "So then, how was that town from your point of view?"

"It is dangerous." The diplomat stated.

"Hmm… To that degree, huh?" The king muttered.

"Right now, it is not much. But, after ten to twenty years, it will definitely become a threat to our country." Braunitze elaborated.

"What did you see? Tell me." The king ordered.

"Everyone lined up atop the castle walls wore armors that seemed to be

made from iron. This wasn't in the last report." The diplomat reported.

"Iron, huh? Did they produce it?" The king asked.

"Perhaps. Moreover, on the west side of the town, there were countless houses built from bricks. This might be in anticipation of a population increase. According to the them, the houses in the town should have been made from wood. In other words, in a land with few trees, they were able to build new houses suitable for that place. That town is developing rapidly. If it is accompanied by the increase in population, it will become a powerful 'country'." Braunitze completed his report.

"Muu…." The king grimaced.

Braunitze concluded that it will become a country. It wasn't about the scale. Braunitze used the word "country" in a sense that it will have equal power with the Kingdom of Sandra.

Then, the new captain of Red Dragon Knight Order, who was kneeling next to Braunitze, cut into the report.

"What are you troubled about, Father? Hasn't it already been decided regarding what to do?" The new captain knight who called the king, father, was a beautiful woman with short golden hair.

Her name is Mireille San Sandra. As her name implied, Mireille is the second daughter of the king\.

Now then, why is the princess acting as the Knight Captain? It will be explained in a bit.

Even though she is a woman, the princess is a tomboy who likes to swing a sword, and has a fondness for bows. Mireille's love regarding that is known to the world But, her martial arts prowess was beyond that of a simple tomboy princess, and was not inferior to the knights'.

…That was something clearly shown about two months before. On the day of

the ceremony to decide the new leader of Red Dragon Knight Order, as per tradition, the one who wants to become a leader needs to have strength above everyone. For that reason, those who are confident can compete with each other by crossing swords, and the last person standing will be appointed as the leader of the Red Dragon Knight Order.

In a formal tournament match, even though only wooden swords are used, if it hits a vulnerable spot, it can still result in broken bones or even death. Therefore, only the participants with ability were able to participate in the match. Sano, a knight apprentice, seemed to have misunderstood something, and participated. Naturally he didn't survive, and lost in the first match.

And suddenly the one who appeared before the champion was Mireille who was wearing a mask. Mireille didn't utter a single word and only held her wooden sword challengingly. For the Knight Order, power is justice, and there was nothing else beside this. Even if it's an intruder who was wearing a mask, they can investigate after the intruder is incapacitated.

One of the knights took a wooden sword and stood before Mireille. But, before he was even able to make a single move, the knight's neck had been hit by Mireille's wooden sword.

"Unusual skill…"

"This is not an ordinary person…"

Like trees being blown by the wind, the knights become excited and murmured amongst themselves.

"Silence!" The knight who was the winner silenced the knights. He was already behaving like he was the leader of the knights.

And then, the match between the champion and Mireille began. It was a splendid match which showcased both of their skills, causing every spectator to

feel breathless with awe.

But, the fight did not last for a long time. In fact, the fight was only about 60 moves. It ended with the champion dropping his sword to the ground, and Mireille pointing her sword at the opponent's chin.

"With this, I am the leader of the Red Dragon Knight Order." Finally, Mireille declared loudly, her feminine voice echoing throughout the venue.

Taking off her mask, she laughed innocently, as if she was a mischievous child who had succeeded pranking someone.

Incidentally, a woman who could win against a trained man… Was there really such thing? The answer was… There are.

She was a genius with an innate talent to manipulate magic within in her body. This ability was not just a convenient coincidence. The royal family was originally from a long line of martial artists. Although the current king has a docile personality, the first king who established the Kingdom of Sandra had the same magic manipulation technique as Mireille, which allowed him to subjugate the land which would eventually become the Kingdom of Sandra by force.

When Mireille was still a child, the story of the founding king was often recited as a bedtime story. It was almost like a fantasy tale about a hero, causing Mireille to admire him. When she realized her talent, the admiration eventually became desire. She wants to be like the founder. Such a feeling became stronger day by day.

The ceremony for appointing a knight leader was held in drill ground. This was the opportunity for Mireille. She is 17 years old now. If she misses this, she will have to marry into another country as a bargaining chip. That was why Mireille stood before the champion and won. Mireille shouted loudly that she was worthy of being the leader of the Red Dragon Knight Order.

Of course, her father, the king, opposed it. But when Mireille said that she would run away if she was not recognized, the king was forced to accept it.

Back to the throne room…

Being told that the beastman town will become powerful in the future, the king was lost for words. On the other hand, Mireille made a disrespectful statement, saying ‘what are you troubled with?’

“What did you want to say, Mireille?” The king looked at her.

“Nip it in the bud. Is it not that simple?” She snorted.

“It’s easy to say that, Mireille. But, to wage war is not so easy.” The king sighed.

“No, Father. On this occasion, it is obvious that it will get harder as time passes. Having time is advantageous for the beastmen. It is vital for us to attack without letting too much time pass. This seems to be a more

reasonable and ‘easy’ strategy.” Mireille suggested.

How is that? Mireille pressed him with her determined eyes. Her disposition was stern. Mireille had already cast away her disposition as a princess, and had developed a strong spirit as a knight leader.

The king breathed lightly, letting out a sigh.

(Why did my daughter grow up to become like this?)

“That is enough, you can leave. I will decide it later.” The king declared.

Braunitze and Mireille stood up, bowed and left. After Braunitze and Mireille left the throne room, the only ones left were the king sitting on his throne and his oldest chief advisor standing next to him.

“It will be too far away even if we attack it. You will only be hurt if you put your hands into the bag. That is why one should not enter the bag in the first place.” The king said.

Because there is a desert between them, the king compared the land the

beastman town was in to a bag. If they attack from here, they will have geographical advantage there. The southern ground doesn't have any supplies. It is a severe place. Anyway, it would not too late even if the beastmen pointed their spears here, or so the king thought.

In short, he was against the war.

In response, the chief advisor shook his head.

"Giving money to those lower classes will only lead the beastman village to expand. We can attack the beastman town and turn it into a supply area. After the war, we can use that as a relay point for commercial purposes."

"What about the earthquakes? We can't build houses there." The king floundered.

"Aren't tents good enough? It can be anything unless you are particular about the shape. In the first place, once we control the beastman town, there won't be any enemies anymore. We won't need castles or walls." The advisor pointed out.

"Umu…" The king still felt undecided.

"Settle the land in spring, cultivate it in summer, plant wheat in autumn, and as soon as they are harvesting the following year, the army will move southward." The advisor suggested.

"But, a siege battle will also cause great damage here as well." The king argued.

"If the town can't fall easily, you can just surround it with numbers. I heard that the fields are outside their walls. They will starve after we surround the town, and they will surrender by their own will." The advisor stated firmly.

[TL: I laughed here.]

[TLC: Well…infinite supplies lol.]

[ED: I laughed too. Gleefully and derisively tbh.]

"Hmm, but the magic analysis is not complete yet…" The king protested

weakly.

The death of Garland, the previous leader of the Red Dragon Knight Order, still weighed heavily on the king's mind. The Red Dragon Knight Order was defeated miserably without being able to bring his corpse or any mementos home. Although it was said that the magic could only be used by an individual, was that really the enemy's only card? That was the concern of the king.

"The situation of the continent is unstable. Does Your Majesty know about the Igor Empire?" The advisor asked.

The Igor Empire is a territory north of the Kingdom of Castile. A civil war occurred due to a contest over some territory. The eldest child won, and the rebellion was quelled, but the one who was manipulating the second child was the Kingdom of Castile.

The eldest child said that since the Kingdom of Castile was supporting the second child, if the second child wins, he will defect from the empire and side with the kingdom.

[TL: this war is in one of the province or territory not war in all the province at the empire]

If the second child becomes the lord and defects to the Kingdom of Castile, it would no longer counted as civil war, and the Igor Empire will not be able to handle it. It was a loophole which the Kingdom of Castile found in the church's no war announcement.

"It is inevitable that a continent will be wrapped up in a war eventually. To cut off that anxious feeling, I think that the subjugation of southern part can't be avoided. Your Majesty, please make your decision." The advisor took his stand.

"Hmm…" However, the king was still indecisive, and avoided making a decision on the spot.

However, at a later date, a discussion which gathered important people from the military and administration was held, and the result was that the kingdom will start their southern subjugation and begin to make their move.

◆

When Braunitze and Mireille were having an audience with the king, the knights, who have returned to the barracks, will take care of their arms, while the apprentice knights would take care of the horses. And, amongst those caring for the armor was Tsutomu Sano.

Sano had been promoted from an apprentice knight to an official knight. The trigger was the appointment of a new knight leader two months ago. Sano, who had participated in the match without knowing his position and lost in the first match, had crossed swords for several dozen moves against a veteran knight. Because there was a vacancy in the Knight Order, the expectations regarding his future potential in sword wielding, and courage, he was openly promoted to knight there.

Getting back to the subject…

In a small, single room typical for knights, Sano was wiping his plate armor with oil. But, his hand movements were dull.

The Red Dragon Knights Order is mainly made up of light cavalry. Unlike heavy cavalries, their equipment maintenance ends quickly. In reality, other knights have already finished their work, and are heading for a bath.

But, Sano was still absent-mindly polishing his armor despite its gleaming shine.

The subject weighing on his mind was the lord of the beastman town. During the meeting with Braunitze and the lord of the beastman town, because Sano stayed with the army, he wasn’t able to see the face of the town’s lord.

(Fujiwara, huh? Looks like there was no one else but Fujiwara…)

During the march, he didn’t have time to think because he wasn’t accustomed to riding a horse, and he also had his duty as a rookie knight.

Fujiwara… If it is written in Japanese kanji, it was common surname. It was also the name of many great men in history.

(He is definitely Japanese. What should I do next?)

The other knights said that when the time comes, they will attack the town.

(What to do when that time comes?)

First of all, he needed to go over his current situation. He became a knight as he desired. He might become the strongest knight in the future.

But when? How many years must he wait?

Sano dislike troublesome things. Recently, he can't feel the swift progress of his sword training like in the beginning, and became bored.

(I need to do a meritorious deed somehow if I want to become a noble.)

The goal of becoming a knight has been achieved. Isn't it already good enough? So, Sano thought that he should move on to his next goal.

The princess who became the leader of the knights… It may be possible to become a noble if he performed a meritorious deed, and was remembered by the princess. No, more than that, if he can lay his hands on the princess who only has a good face…

[TL: what a scumbag. I hope he get blowed by Fujiwara Cannon]

[TLC: yeah lol.]

[ED: Hope the princess spears his ass instead.]

"Gufufu." A wicked idea appeared in Sano's mind.

Sano was pissed at the beginning when the woman become the leader, but now, it doesn't seem so bad anymore.

And then, a meritorious deed named Fujiwara has rolled in front of Sano. There is nothing to worry about it. With Fujiwara as a stepping stone, he will be able to step into nobility.

However, there is a problem. It is the modern weapon [Gun]. It would be extremely troublesome to deal with it. Even Garland, who was able to grab a flying arrow, died when dealing with the [Gun].

(Wait…)

After all, guns need an ammunition, there is no doubt that there is a limit.

(Just how many do they have? Of course, I don't know. No, leaving that aside, if I approached him as someone who came from the same country, and was able to hold him hostage while he is careless…)

I am confident that my sword is faster than the opponent's gun. In the previous world, Sano had heard a saying that knives were scarier in close combat.

Sano put away the armor he polished, took up his sword, and went outside. Then, he swung the sword as much as he wanted on the grass growing at the garden. He was doing image training against a man with a[Gun].

For the coming battle, Sano will not be lenient even if they were from the same town. Eat or being eaten. It was only that.

But, he had a baseless conceit in his strength, so he couldn't imagine that he would be defeated. After all, it was just a shallow youth's dream.

Chapter 034 - Eve of War ①

One day after winter had ended, Romatto, who had been held captive in the beastman town, returned back to the Kingdom of Sandra. When Mireille heard about the report, she visited Romatto in the evening after training.

“Here, huh?” She muttered to herself.

Romatto, who had finished his audience at the castle, was taken to an inn in the city. The place where Mireille went to was an inn built with bricks in the district for nobles.

“Innkeeper, do you have a minute?” She called out.

“Yes. What can I do for you, Knight-sama?” He hurried out to greet her.

Mireille was wearing a cloak belonging to the Red Dragon Knights, and had a sword strapped to her waist. Thus, everyone knew that she was a knight at first glance. In addition, because she lacked curves on her body, if she wears chest bindings, and put on men’s clothes, no one would notice that she was a woman.

“I heard that a man called Romatto is staying here.” When Mireille asked about it, the innkeeper answered politely and guided her to Romatto’s room on the second floor.

Mireille stood in front of the room. A stain on the wooden door caught her eyes. Not just the door. For an inn in the noble district, both the walls and corridors were dirty for some reason. While thinking about such a thing, Mireille knocked on the room’s door.

“I am the leader of Red Dragon Knight Order. Can I come in?” She announced herself.

“Pl-Please wait a minute..!” The person behind the door floundered.

She could hear rattling sounds from inside the room. Before long, the door was opened, and Romatto, who now had a flabby chin, appears.

“Please.” He gestured nervously.

“Umu.” Mireille grunted and stepped in without further ceremony.

The room was shabby, and only had some chairs, a desk, and a bed. It’s obvious that this place was located in the poorer region amongst all the inns in the noble district.

“I am Mireille, the new leader of the Red Dragon Knight Order.” She declared her identity.

“Y-Yes. I am Romatto Bidenhulk.” The man stuttered.

[TLC: names..like this when they don’t give ・, it is one name. I did fixed it some chapter ago and give notes on it iirc]

Mireille observed the nervous Romatto. His face, neck, arms and fingers. After looking at his whole body part by part, she couldn’t spot any trace of torture at all.

Besides, most of the captives usually become thinner when they come back home, but Romatto clearly became much fatter. Mireille thought that it was strange.

“I will take my seat. You sit down too.” She ordered.

When Mireille sat down on the chair, Romatto also sat down on the chair across the desk.

“Tell me as much as you know about the beastman town. What is the condition of the town? How have you lived till now?” Mireille asked Romatto about the the beastman town.

To know your enemy is the most important thing in the war. Their culture and customs, their personal tastes and character, you won't know what might lead to the victory.

Since he had already said the same thing to the people in the castle, Romatto began to speak in a well-practiced fashion.

What kind of town was it? What kind of tribes were there? What kind of person was the Lord of the town? Romatto told her everything he knew from their food, buildings, and climate.

Mireille listened to him silently. She had already heard that the degree of their civilization was high, so she was not surprised in particular. It was said that the master of the town was a great man.

But, she was slightly interested about Romatto's treatment. Although he was locked up in one room, it was much bigger and cleaner than the room he had right now. He was given three meals, and a change of clothes each day, and he was even able to take a bath too.

In the Kingdom of Sandra, the captives were place into the dungeons. It's a place where insects breed, and the surfaces were smeared with filthy water. The difference was like heaven and hell.

Romatto said that he killed time by playing a board game with the beastmen almost everyday.

(What is that?)

Mireille's head hurt. Rather than a prisoner of war, wasn't it more like him being invited as a guest there?

(Well, it's not an unbelievable story)

When the story ended, it was already dark outside. Inside the room, the tallow candle brought in by the innkeeper in the middle of the story gave off an unpleasant smell as it was lit up.

Mireille suddenly became interested about the game with small wooden statues on top of a wooden board on the bed. Looking closely, it seemed like the pieces were moved on top of the wooden board in a certain manner. It resembled a military board game which the nobility enjoyed.

“Is that the thing you were talking about?” She asked.

“Yes. They called it chess. It is very profound.” He nodded solemnly as he placed the item onto the desk.

When he was asked how he was able to get this, Romatto said that it was a farewell gift from the beastmen who he became friends with.

While listening to the explanation of chess, although it was much simpler than the military board game, Mireille thought it was quite elaborate.

When she said that she wanted to give it a try, Romatto took out a new wooden board and a small box from the bag.

“If that is the case, I have other good things.” He stated proudly.

“This is?” Mireille tilted her head to the side in confusion.

“This is called reversi. These black and white pieces are called disks. You played it in turns, and change the color of your opponent’s disks by sandwiching them. It is a game where you compete on the amount of disks you have at the end. Because it is simple, I thought that this would be better to play if you’re a beginner.”

[TLC: the formal term is disks not stone in english although the kanji uses

stone]

Mireille thought that it seemed easy.

“Let’s do it then.” She nodded in agreement.

First, they arranged the four pieces, and then, they take turns placing their disks. It is only a game, but because there is a victor and loser, Mireille challenged the board game seriously. No one likes to lose after all.

(It’s good to take more disks, it’s just that easy of a game. The purpose of the game is to not overlook the places where you can take a lot of disks.)

Mireille was making light of it, thinking that it was a childish game. That confidence was reflected on Mireille’s black disks that were overwhelming the board.

“What? You’re so weak.” Mireille smiled arrogantly.

She doubted if his eyes were even open as Romatto had overlooked a lot of places where he could turn the disks many times since a while ago.

“No, it starts from now.” Romatto simply smiled back calmly.

And again, the sound of disks being placed echoed. What happened afterwards was that from the middle till the end of the game, all of Mireille’s black disks were being turned upside down.

“Im… Impossible…” She gasped.

The game was over, and the results were 6 to 58. They didn’t even need to count to find out that Mireille had lost.

“Well, it’s usually like this the first time round.” Romatto spoke smugly.

The grin on his face made Mireille want to beat up him, but she suppressed it will all her strength. Instead, a vein throbbed violently on her forehead.

“One more time!” Mireille recklessly challenged Romatto again.

(The corner. The starting point is the corner. If I can just take the corner…)

After one game, as expected, Mireille was able to see the importance of the corner. However, it was impossible to win against Romatto, who had been playing only board games all day for a long time, so she suffered a complete defeat again.

“…Once more.” She still wanted to challenge him again.

But, the third game was decided before the disks were able to fill the board. Of course, the winner was Romatto.

Fed up, Mireille surrendered, placed her disks down, and asked.

“Do you have any intentions of returning to the Red Dragon Knight Order?”

It was an unexpected question. Then, Romatto made a face as if trying to endure regrets. He wanted to return, or so Mireille felt.

But, Romatto shook his head.

“Why? I heard that your swordsmanship is quite good, no?” She demanded.

“You want to attack that town right? I cannot do such a thing.” He stated firmly.

There was no need to ask. He lived with the beastmen everyday, and even got a gift. He became attached to them.

“Is that so?” She asked impassively before leaving the room.

◆

This is Mireille’s diary.

Spring.

The settlement to the south for the people of lower strata began. Although it needs a considerable amount for the initial investment, there was considerable profit from the trade with spices, so there was no need to worry about money.

Romatto's current condition.

The legitimate heir's position had already fallen to the second son, and Romatto's status was withdrawn. He was made to write a pledge under the priest to not fight, and swear that to God. He was not allowed to return to his territory, and if he decided to live in the Imperial City, all his monthly living expenses would be taken care of.

It is a miserable story, but if you lose, you only have yourself to blame.

Summer.

It is about time for the the settlers to begin cultivating the land. Next year, at this time, we will invade the beastman town. It is a hot season, but it will be even hotter in southern region.

The true enemy might not be the beastmen, a castle wall, or an unknown magic, but rather, this heat.

By the way, Reversi was being sold in the castle town. It was supervised by Romatto. With its simple and clear rules, quick playing time, and cheap prices, the game was selling like hot cakes. For those who couldn't buy the board, they were playing it by drawing 64 squares on the ground. Reversi became a wildly popular game in Sandoria.

Furthermore, Romatto's name became famous, and everyone knows him. He was still undefeated in reversi for now.

Autumn.

It seems like the settlers of the village have already begun sowing seeds.

I saw Romatto in the royal castle. He seems to be nervous and tense when I called out him, so I listened to his story. It seems like he was being called by my father to be his Reversi instructor. It seems like Reversi isn't only popular in the city, but also in the castles and barracks.

When Romatto returned from the castle, I got annoyed by his triumphant look.

Winter.

Regarding the settlement, it is going well without any abnormalities in particular in terms of the regular communication. But, they have cut most of the trees near the river. It seems like from next year, they will need to transport firewood from our country.

By the way, Chess began to be sold in the Imperial City. It seems like "that" Romatto is the one who supervised to sold it, but all the people came back to Reversi immediately. However, it seems to be popular with some people.

Spring.

A war has begun in the far north. The church issued a new declaration and said that if it is a war for a great cause, we will not excommunicate them. Then, at the same time as that declaration, the Kingdom of Castile invaded the Igor Empire.

The land that was invaded was the area where a territorial dispute had taken place since the olden days, and also, the place where the civil war occurred between the eldest child and second child due to the machinations of the kingdom one year ago.

With the Kingdom of Castile striking with its main force, the Igor Empire wasn't able to do much to prevent it with only part of its force, so the territory was snatched in no time.

Their preparation is too well done. It was clear that the Kingdom of Castile and the Church had a prior agreement.

Of course, the Igor Empire also moved to recapture the territory by gathering its soldiers. But, it was already too late as the Kingdom of Castile had already strengthened the defense ahead of time, and the situation doesn't look too good for Igor Empire.

Eventually, the Church mediated peace between two countries, and it became a truce.

Also, other countries were getting busy, and the diplomats, including Braunitze, were running around to allied countries.

The current state of the continent was like being stuffed into an overly small box. It seemed like it will burst out of the box any moment. When the lid comes off, the continent will be wrapped up in a major war. Although it's a calamity, it's also a good opportunity for a country to make a big leap.

I wish to be able to carve my name in history just like the founding king of the Kingdom of Sandra.

[TL: Impossiblurrrrr, you are fighting the MC here. Well there might be a spot for a harem member of great king? probably.…]

By the way, a Reversi competition was held in the Imperial City of Sandoria, and it was said that Romatto won the championship easily. Our new rookie knight seemed to have joined, and was able to overwhelm Romatto at first, but he was eventually overturned in the middle of the game, and lost.

—— and then, summer arrived.

Chapter 035 - Eve of War ②

At the end of may, the color of wheat started to change, and their harvesting began. Then, at the end of June, that day finally arrived

“I hereby decree the beginning of the invasion of the south. Leader of Yellow Dragon Knight Order, Barbarodem Darsen, is appointed Great General. Leader of Red Dragon Knight Order, Mireille Saint Sandora, is appointed Vice General. Both of you will lead your respective Knight Orders and join the infantry unit to the southern regions and take over the beastmen’s town.” The king declared.

““YES!””

The giant Barbarodem and the knight princess Mireille received the order of the king in the throne room.

The bells of war tolled.

Still, it seemed unnecessary for two knight orders to take part in a castle siege, but this is a preparation for the allied soldiers rather than for the enemies. Even if it was easy to attack the beastmen’s town, when the fierce battle starts, the order of the army will be disturbed. Due to the fear of death, the soldiers might rebel or desert the army. Therefore, to maintain military order, it was necessary to have a stronger ally watch over them.

“Mireille-dono, Count Sarabona has sent 2,000 soldiers from her territory. They will join us at the southernmost village.” Barbarodem informed.

“Understood.” The princess nodded curtly.

The Yellow Knight Order led by Barbarodem were heavy cavalry troops. As their rear troops, which consisted of engineering troops and transportation corps, will slow them down, they will be using the Lucille River in the south, which flows toward the river north of the beastmen’s town, and arrive ahead of time. On their way there, they will be joined by Count Umbroshna’s infantries

from the southern edge territory.

Taking advantage of the mobility of the Red dragon Knight Order lead by Mireille which consisted of light cavalry troops, they will move towards another corner of the southern territory ruled Count Sarabona, and pick up another 2,000 soldiers here.

The soldiers consisted of 4,000 infantrymen from southern area, 1,000 cavalrymen, and a 300 strong supply troop. The southern invasion consisted of 5,300 soldiers in total.

“Red Dragon Knights, move out!” Mireille ordered sternly.

500 vanguards of the Red Dragon Knight Order that lined up in front of the castle saluted in response and obeyed her orders. The Red Dragon Knights received cheers from the people as they departed from the Imperial City of Sandoria.

They were approximately 300 km away from the southwestern land. They didn’t need any transportation troops. It was the best route for the Red Dragon Knight Order which has light equipment. It was a distance which they could cover in 5 days.

Before long, the Red Dragon Knights joined up with the infantrymen from Sarabona. They allowed the local soldiers who knew about the geographical landmarks to lead the way, and went southeast until they reached Lucille river. Because there were a lot of hills in the area, they advanced in a vertical formation.

The plains spread out as they left the south territory. Because they could arrange the soldiers into a horizontal formation now, the differences between the frontline and rear became much smaller. Although they could march faster

now, but because they have joined up with an infantry troop, their speed didn't increase much.

"Alright, let's take a break here! Feed the horses as well!" Mireille commanded.

They took breaks approximately once every hour. As they crossed the southern area, there were only plains without any villages, so there was plenty of feed for the horses.

But, horses are light eaters. They will not get enough nutrition from grass if only fed a few times a day. That is why they took breaks in intervals to let them feed properly.

[TL: the first time I heard that ancient people talking about nutrition for horse.]

While the horses drank from the river, the knights finished their miscellaneous tasks. Mireille was human too, so something that needs to taken care of needs to be taken care of. But, there was only one woman among the men. Thus, even Mireille, who was a strong-minded woman, felt embarrassed because of "it".

[TL: remind me of mulan.]

Mireille hid under the cover of some shadows. Even the plains were not totally flat, and there were still small hills to hide behind. Mireille, without showing any hesitation, lowered her pants and squatted down.

[TL: author, really? Did you need to go this much details?]

At this moment, Mireille was thinking that it's troublesome to be a woman. She didn't want to become a man or anything like that. It's just that it took two times more effort to take care of women's various needs.

Then, she heard the sound of footsteps. Alarmed by the sound, Mireille turned sideways, and saw one knight standing there foolishly.

“Ah, I’m sorry.” He apologised quickly and turned around.

Although he turned around quickly, she could see that the knight had a grin on his face as he returned in the direction he came from.

She could tell just by looking at his face. That knight came to this place on purpose.

Mireille thought about it again. For a woman to become a leader of a knight order… There will be people who don’t like it. Mireille knew about it. But, that remark… Did he just want to look at a woman doing her business? What a vulgar person.

But, Mirielle doesn’t feel any shame at all from being peeped at. Unreasonable acts during march… The person who doesn’t know time and place was not a person, but a beast. Being looked by a beast, humans will not feel anything. It’s only like that. However, she still intended to discipline the beast like the beast he was.

“Oi! You bastard!” She heard a loud voice from other side of cover as she pulled up her pants.

“Aah, what is it? Isn’t it the newcomer who just became a knight? Do you have any complaints against your senior?” The man sneered.

“The fact that I am a newcomer doesn’t have any relationship to this!” The newcomer stated angrily.

Looks like someone saw him peeping. But, it won’t be good if left as it is. The dispute between knights could lead to infighting during the war.

“Stop!” Mireille called out from the shadows.

“But, this guy!” The newcomer tried to object.

“It’s just an accident. I don’t mind at all.” She stated calmly.

At Mireille’s words, that vulgar knight let out a huff with a triumphant face and left. The other knight was still glaring at him.

She has seen that face before. She remembered that he had good sword skills, but there was still a long way to go. Mireille tilted her head to the side as she tried to remember his name.

“Your name is…” She muttered.

“Yes, it is Tsutomu Sano!” He replied energetically.

“Sano, huh. I will remember that name.” She nodded at him.

“Yes, I am honored!” He hollered and knelt down immediately.

Mireille glanced at him briefly while placing her feet onto the stirrups of her own horse. Sano might only want to curry favor. But, at least he had some common sense while doing that. Mireille thought that this was far better than a beast without any reason.

The army marched around 20 km a day. They sent fast horses to the villages in the south to let the villagers make meals for them before the army arrived. It was to eliminate any wasted time, and also allowed the soldiers to take more breaks.

[TL: the villages here is the new villages, while the southern region from before is still considered as Sandra Kingdom area.]

There was no need to destroy the tents. The soldiers would sleep with the sky as the ceiling, and a camp for the knights would have been built before they even arrived at the village.

Then, they finally arrived at the southernmost village. There will be no more villages after this. The town of the beastmen was about 30 km from here.

However, it doesn’t seems like Barbarodem has arrived yet.

“It is already late. Let’s take a break here. Let both the men and horses take a good rest.” Mireille ordered.

Before Barbarodem arrived, it was important for the men and horses to adapt to the climate of this land. It was so hot that they couldn’t get accustomed to it quickly.

The blazing sunlight was sucking away moisture without any mercy. Not only the body, even the earth has lost its water, and grass grew sparsely. Without a river, Mireille thought that this was not place where anyone could live.

After taking care of the horses, there was nothing much to do, so Mireille went to look at the siege weapons they had transported with them. It was a stone throwing catapult, an indispensable item for a siege.

The unknown magic was able to attack from a position 300 meters away while the range of the catapult was 400 meters. With its thick frame, it can also be used as barrier to protect themselves. In addition, with the massive triangular roof attached at top, even with the unknown magic would have difficulty piercing it.

“Hmph, we will force them out of the town with this.” Mireille pictured the near future and laughed alone.

Five days after the Red Dragon Knights arrived at the southernmost village, the Yellow Dragon Knights finally arrived. The reason for their delay was because the infantry troops did not gather on time.

After another day’s rest, the entire army marched. The Yellow Dragon Knights acted as vanguards, the infantry lined up behind them, and the Red Dragon Knights and the supply troops were positioned in the rear.

While Mireille sat on top of her horse, she told herself that the war will start from now on.

It's Mireille's first war. It's not like she doesn't have enthusiasm. Her whole body was hot with excitement, as if she was being boiled in a pot. It was a heat that surpassed the hot temperature of the environment, so she suddenly stopped sweating. Her body temperature was normal, but the insides of her body was incredibly hot.

[TL: I think it is more or less about psycology thing.]

Before the sun set, they found the watch tower located about 4 km north of the beastmen's town. There were no shadows of any beastmen there. This meant that the beastmen town was aware of the Kingdom of Sandra's intentions.

Under Barbarodem's instructions, the soldiers built a camp under the watchtower. The camp will become their house while they remained in this land. While building the camp, there was no reaction from the beastmen town.

In the evening, a war council was held. The sound of work could still be heard from outside. The people gathered at the commander camp were: Barbarodem and the vice leader of the Yellow Dragon Knights, Mireille and the vice leader, Thomas, of the Red Dragon Knights, and another four people who were the leaders of the infantry troops from the southern territories. These eight people had gathered today to plan for the course of the war.

"First——" Barbarodem spoke up to start the war council.

However, at that moment, it became noisy outside.

"What happened?!" Mireille demanded.

"Mireille-sama! I have something to report!" Outside of the curtain, someone cried out her name.

Mireille thought that it was a familiar voice. There was no doubt that it was someone from the Red Dragon Knights. Now then, who was it?

Mireille stood up, ignoring the complaints about rudeness pouring out from the other leaders, and went outside the curtain. Vice leader Thomas was right behind Mireille.

“If I am not wrong, you are Sano, right?” She asked.

Behind the curtain was Sano. It was the newcomer she remembered during the march.

“There is something I’d like to tell you!” Sano knelt and said.

“This is too sudden! Where do you think this place is?! Rather, what about the camp construction, you bastard?!” Thomas was angered and raged at him.

A low ranked knight appeared without permission at the military council where only senior knight could enter. Sano was bringing disgrace to their group.

“Well, it’s fine, vice leader.” Mireille stated.

Was Sano’s true nature an honest or a cunning one? She was a little bit interested. Anyway, since he came all the way here to talk to the point of disturbing war council, it might actually be something important.

“Say it.” She ordered.

“Just one thing. Would you please recommend me to ask them to surrender?” He begged.

What is this? It’s neither poison nor medicine (neither harmful nor helpful)… Mireille was disappointed.

“I don’t really mind who goes there. The scale of this place didn’t change much from the first time we attacked it. Thus, like before, they will likely show

resistance.” She sighed.

Then, Sano made an elated face. It seemed like he had some hidden card. It was such face.

“To tell you the truth, I was from the same village as the master of that town. But, it can’t be said we were acquaintances.” He stated.

This time, Mireille was impressed.

“That means you know something about this unknown magic?” That deep voice came from behind Mireille.

Mireille took a glimpse at her back and saw Barbarodem standing behind her, unnoticed.

“I don’t know about the details, but it’s some kind of device…” Sano explained.

Mireille’s eyebrows rose upon hearing his words. After all, she was concerned about the unknown magic. But, Sano said that he knew of the device. If that’s truly the case, then this was priceless information.

“You may enter.” Barbarodem gave his permission.

Barbarodem and his vice leader sat in the middle, while various generals sat equally on his right and left side. Sano knelt down alone while receiving their strong stares.

“Say it.” Barbarodem stated while looking at Sano with sharp eyes, eyes that won’t forgive any lies.

“The technique firing that throwing stone isn’t magic. It is due to weapons

called guns.” After saying that, Sano started drawing a picture in the ground with his finger.

All of the generals were looking at it. As Mireille looked at the drawn picture, she thought that it was like a hammer. But, she was wrong. The part where Mireille though was a hammer’s handle was actually a cylinder according to Sano.

“After stuffing a lump of iron inside the long cylinder, the explosion caused by gunpowder will launch it out.” Sano further elaborated.

“Explosion?” Mireille tilted her head when she heard the word ‘explosion’.

There was no gunpowder in this world. Therefore, they would not understand the scientific phenomenon of an explosion. However, a sudden burst of magic power from inside is similar to an explosion, so the word itself existed.

“At that point, the bullet will be blown out by the fierce winds from the explosion. It is enough if you think of like that.” He simplified the explanation.

While listening to Sano’s explanation, Mireille groaned softly. She doesn’t really understand what he was saying. It was just that Mireille is trying to wrap her mind around the possibility of an iron firing another piece of iron.

“It has the same principle as a blowpipe. You concentrate power on one side of the pipe, and the mass of iron will shoot out because the power, right?

It certainly make sense. Do you know the range that it can cover?” Barbarodem remarked.

But, Sano shook his head as he did not know the distance it could cover.

“Can this weapon be prepared as much as one likes?” Barbarodem pressed on.

“No, I think the number is limited because it is very difficult to make. No one is able to make one except if he is a specialized engineer. Moreover, there is

another thing. Our country is not on this continent. It is impossible to bring it from that place since it is on the other side of the sea.” Sano stated.

“What? Did you say you crossed the ocean?” Barbarodem demanded.

“Yes. While crossing the sea, we were shipwrecked, and drifted to this continent.” Sano answered.

“Why were you silent about this till now?” The general questioned.

“I have never had a chance to talk about it, and another reason is that my hometown is in the west.” The Japanese male replied.

“…West, huh.” Barbarodem muttered.

Sano escaped from Barbarodem’s interrogation by saying that he came from the west sea. Everyone was convinced about why Sano didn’t talk about it now.

On the church’s map, there was nothing in the west. It was supposed to be the end of the world. What would happen if someone said something about it? It was a story where someone could be put into an inquisition because of it.

“I don’t care about your hometown. Why did you recommend yourself as the one to advice them to surrender? Do you think that that person will surrender because you asked them to?” Mireille frowned.

“I think it is impossible. But, I will definitely be able to get something out of them at least.” Sano stared at them confidently.

Barbarodem remained silent for a short while after hearing Sano’s reply before opening his mouth.

“Alright. Do it.” He coolly gave the order.

Chapter 036 - Sano and Nobuhide

“The first step is a success.” Sano grinned as he left the commanders’ camp.

He was able to successfully curry favor with Mireille, and made her trust him. Even if it incurred displeasure from some senior knights, it doesn’t matter. After all, they were opponents which he would quickly surpass. But more importantly, it’s time to gain achievements. Sano renewed his determination.

The next morning…

Sano, who had received the command from Barbarodem, rode a horse and rushed towards the beastmen’s town. As he neared the town, he could see the beastmen drawing their bows from their positions on the stone wall.

Beside them, he could see something covered with cloth curtains that were placed equally apart on the stone walls. Sano was a little bit interested, but since he had other things to do now, he pushed it out of his mind.

“I am only a messenger! Please don’t attack!” Sano waved his hand vigorously and shouted as loudly as he could.

It would be stupid if he died here, so it could be said to be a reasonable reaction. However, contrary to his behavior, Sano didn’t worry too much about being attacked. The reason is the behaviour of the beastmen’s town.

Sano had heard some stories about the beastmen’s town. It could be said that everything he heard was how rational and humane they were. On the contrary, it was the humans who were all about invading other territories.

Sano came from a world where ethics and morality were strongly emphasised, so there was no way he could not recognize which side was evil.

But, even when he noticed it, he didn't intend to do anything at all.

A strong man will have high self-confidence. In this world where it's the survival of the fittest, it's convenient for Sano's sense of values to change. Yes, in this world preaching about the survival of the fittest, Sano conveniently believed that he's strong enough to come out on top.

"What about the army behind you?!" Someone shouted from the top of stone walls.

Those words came from someone who could be said to be different from the rest of the beastmen.

(What is that?)

The man was wearing a helmet, orange goggles, and covered his mouth with black cloth. He wore sand colored clothes, thick black body armor, and was holding a rifle in his hand. That man was dressed like a soldier that was often seen on tv.

(It's him!)

But, he tilted his head to the side in bewilderment at the same time. If the card he received from God was a [Gun], then what about the rest of the equipment he was wearing? Sano thought for a little bit, and an answer came to his mind right away.

(I guess the card is probably a [Military Equipment Set].)

"My name is Sano! Tsutomu Sano! I have heard about your name! You are also Japanese, right?" Sano turned around and shouted to the man who dressed like a soldier.

There was no reply. Sano thought that the man was merely silent from surprise.

If that man was really shaken from his presence, then things would turn out well for Sano since the opponent's cognition abilities will decline, and Sano, who was calmer, would be able to take the lead in the talk.

"As fellow countrymen, I requested to be a messenger because I couldn't stand this! I don't care about the views of this world! I want to talk to my fellow countryman who has the same values as I!" While Sano cried out, he was trying his best not to laugh out loud.

Then, the reply finally came.

"Alright! But first, get down from your horse and put down your weapons!"

Hearing that, Sano clicked his tongue silently. But, there was no choice other than to obey the instructions given. With this, one of his potential cards that could be used to hold the opponent hostage disappeared.

(Even though we are from same country, it is still not easy to trust each other, huh? It seems like he is not like that good for nothing Suzunose. But, I think it that this should still go well…) He grumbled internally.

Sano dismounted from his horse and threw his sword onto the ground.

"Wait a moment!" With that, the man disappeared from the top of stone walls, and the sound of gongs rang out from the town.

Sano was about to grab his sword again, but there was no movement from the beastmen.

(What? Does that sound have any meaning at all? Is it a signal for something? If it is, then what does it mean?)

Sano thought while observing the surroundings.

Anyway, that sound was so loud that the surrounding noise seemed to disappear. It could probably drown out the sound of a car's engine with no

problems at all.

Eventually, the gate opened. What appeared was a man who rode a big camel. Sano never thought that a camel would appear. He was so startled that he took a step back, but he managed to steady himself shortly thereafter.

Meanwhile, a beastman appeared at the side of the camel, and picked up Sano's sword that was on the ground.

"So, what do you want to talk about?" The man asked indifferently.

(It would be bad to be agitated.)

"Are you Fujiwara-san?" He asked after taking a calming breath.

The man nodded as if saying 'yes'.

"I will introduce myself again. I am Sano, Tsutomu Sano. When I first came to this world, I was still a high school student. But, I am already over twenty years old now." Sano explained with a friendly smile. "Ah, by the way, my card is [Pretty Good Shield]. It's a one star card. But, I didn't bring it with me because it's an obstruction when I ride a horse."

In the self introduction, he mixed in the contents of his card casually. Of course, the contents were a lie. The reason why he gave information about his card was to set the scene. That way, even if the other party does not want to talk about his card, Sano would be able to ask about without feeling out of place.

"I am called Fujiwara Nobuhide. I was an on-hire employee before I came to this world."

It was a brief self-introduction. This man, Nobuhide, did not talk about his card at all. In addition, the sudden usage of honorifics....

For a moment, he thought that this man the timid type like Suzunose, but it

seems like he's different, because Nobuhide spoke smoothly, very much unlike a timid person.

"Um, should I also use honorifics?" Sano asked.

"I do not mind if you speak normally. It's just a habit of mine." Nobuhide replied curtly.

"I see. Then, I shall just speak normally… Well, I am certainly a messenger from the army. I think that you will be able to guess the contents of the message easily. It is an advice to surrender, more or less. However, that does not matter. My real purpose was to talk to you." Sano smiled disarmingly. "I heard of your name from my superior by chance, so I knew that the lord of this town was in the same situation as me. Thus, I felt that becoming a messenger was a surefire way of getting in contact with you."

"If you are a messenger, then will our friends not be worried if you do not go back soon?" Nobuhide inquired.

"If I do not return within two hours, they will automatically commence the attack." Sano stated noncommittally.

This was also a lie. Whether Sano returned or not, the army will attack three days later. Until then, they will build a camp while restoring their energy. This was the army's plan.

To have 5000 soldiers stationed right in front of the town has its own benefits. With the army being there, those in the town will be intimidated, so he doesn't have to worry about his safety. However, the beastmen may try to attack the camp if they become anxious. If so, it will be what the army hoped for. An open field battle was what they wanted.

"…Fine. But, since you are an enemy soldier, would you mind if we inspect your body?" Nobuhide asked.

"I don't mind." Sano nodded.

Two beastmen approached Sano, and a body check was done. But, there was nothing wrong. Sano didn't even have a knife on him.

(Hm, such a distrustful person.)

Sano sneered in his mind.

The fact that repeating something like this would lead to trust was something he learned automatically while flattering those knights when he was still an apprentice knight.

When Nobuhide invited him inside the town, Sano followed him quickly. The contents inside of the stone walls was like a different world.

“Are… Are you serious..?” Sano sighed unconsciously.

It was an old Japanese townscape.

“Wha… What the hell is with this town?” He demanded.

“I made it with the beastmen. I was doing the work related to architecture.” Nobuhide shrugged.

Because he heard that he was a temporary employee, he made fun of him in his mind. He thought he was just a dropout who couldn’t become a regular employee, and that he was just a lucky bastard who pulled out a good card called [Gun].

But, this wasn’t ordinary. He can’t make light of this temporary worker. It was unusual for Sano to revise his evaluation of his opponent.

They entered the nearest house. It was a tatami room which he had not seen for a long time. After sitting down, a cup of water was served immediately. Sano drank all the contents in one go.

Nobuhide sat the opposite of Sano. He removed his helmet, goggles and the

cover over his mouth.

He doesn't recognize that face even after it became bare. It had already been five years. At that time, even if he saw him at that white room, he can't remember him at all. More than that, Sano was more concerned about the handgun on his waist than his identity.

(If I am able to take that and take Fujiwara as hostage… No, surely there is a safety device on that gun. While being confused, I will be killed by the beastmen outside the room.)

While thinking such a thing, Sano placed his cup onto the table.

"…Have you ever met other people from the same country?"

The one who started the conversation first was Sano.

"No, I haven't. What about you?" Nobuhide answered simply.

"There was a guy who was transferred to this world together with me. We were able to help each other and stay alive somehow. But, it was hard work… The other guy is called Suzunose, and he got sick. That is why I am risking my life this way to earn money to buy medicine for him." Sano rambled.

It was a lie to pull a sympathy. Sano understood that it was useless to push with power.

"…If you'd like, would the both of you come and live here?" Nobuhide invited.

"No, that fellow can't come here right now. He doesn't have the strength to. I will be able to support him somehow…" Sano grasped his fist tightly while trying to hold back his tears.

"Is that so…" Nobuhide followed up.

"Well, because there is Suzunose, I feel like I can do my best somehow." Sano showed a forced smile.

The atmosphere in the room suddenly become solemn. Then as if he wanted to lighten up the atmosphere, Sano said the next words brightly.

"I was interested since a while ago. That's a gun, right?"

"Yes." The man nodded.

"Did you get it from your card?" Sano asked eagerly.

"Well…" Nobuhide hesitated visibly.

"Do you have any problems with the bullets?" Sano continued his questioning.

"…" He remained silent.

When there was no answer, Sano smirked in his heart.

(As expected, the bullets are limited. He should not have many bullets left.)

With this, there was no need to fear if he could return safely or not. But, Sano thought that it wouldn't become a problem either. A lie about someone from the same country suffering from an illness… It's working quite well.

(Suzunose. You finally became useful to me.)

Sano remembered the appearance of Suzunose, who was still in a distant village.

"Sorry for telling you some strange things. Everyone has their own viewpoints on certain things. Well then, are you not going to surrender? If it's now, it might still be possible to get good remuneration." Sano urged.

"I'm sorry." Nobuhide apologised.

"I see…" Sano sighed regretfully.

Then, silence followed. The silence was good for Sano. It was the evidence that he dominated the situation. Sano thought that everything was within his expectations.

From there, they talked about trifling things. Sano also asked about [pepper] and so on, but Nobuhide changed the subject skilfully.

“Well then, I need to return soon. If I stay too long, I will become attached, and it will be hard in the future.” Sano excused himself.

They stood up and left the house together. In front of the gate, a beastman returned him the sword and his horse. The distance between him and Nobuhide, who is seeing him off, was about 3 meters. Furthermore, the beastman was waiting next to Nobuhide. When Sano approached Nobuhide by just a single step, the the short spear wielded by the beastman twitched.

It seems like it would be impossible to take Nobuhide hostage from this position, or so Sano judged, especially since the opponent also has a gun.

“It was nice to meet you today. Let’s each do our best in this world.” After saying that, Sano mounted his horse and dashed back to the camp.

There were some gains from this trip. Sano saw that there were only two guns, and both of them were on Nobuhide only. The others didn’t possess any. It was also obvious from Nobuhide’s reaction that there were not enough bullets for two guns.

(I wasn’t able to take Fujiwara hostage, but this amount of information is enough for now.)

With the fear of the strange magic dissipating, they would be able to broaden their tactics. It was certainly a meritorious deed.

Furthermore, if there was another chance, he would advise Nobuhide to surrender after a prolonged war.

(Fujiwara. In order to increase my chances for promotion, please work hard so

you don’t lose too soon.)

While cutting through hot, dry air atop his horse, Sano muttered out what in his mind.

Chapter 037 - War ①

I will focus on the MC again next.

———————————————————————————————-

The sun began rising from the eastern horizon, the sight akin a brilliant red flame gradually turning pale as it illuminated the world.

At a certain southern land, while basking in the early sunlight, an enormous number of humans started to crawl. They're the Kingdom of Sandra's army that was starting to attack the beastmen's town.

"Advance!" Under the orders of the commander-in-chief, Barbarodem, the huge army started to move.

12 catapults on the frontline that were lined up side by side were pulled by large, western horses that were neighing in exertion while advancing. Behind them were carts loaded with stones and oil jars for catapults. Following after that were the infantries and the knights forming a line.

Their strategy this time was very simple. First of all, they will concentrate their attacks on the northern side of the town with catapults. If the beastmen can't endure it anymore, and come out from the gate, they will send the infantry forward to strike the enemy while the Red Dragon Knight Order will perform a pincer attack from the side, and crush the beastmen. If the beastmen don't come out, they will continue to shoot the stones and the oil jars. After the enemies' fighting spirits have been chipped down, they will then let out the soldiers with battering rams to deal the final blow. Then, depending of the enemies' level of resistance, they will then decide if the war will be short-term or long-term by performing a siege.

This was the strategy decided by the military council the previous day.

The Yellow Dragon Knights were located at the rear left wing, while the Red Dragon Knights were located at at the rear right wing. Amongst them, Mireille was positioned right at the front of the Red Dragon Knights. When the beastmen come out from the town, she will rush from this place and act as a vanguard.

The army had come to the point where the distance from the target was around 2.5 km. The battle was nigh.

Mireille thought that the enemy would come out suddenly. It was said that the beastmen were riding some kind of animal, so it‘s not impossible. If the lord of the town led a cavalry and attacked with lightning speed, they could still cancel the catapult attack, and turn it around.

But, the question was this — can the beastmen recognize the objects called siege weapons in the first place? If they don’t know of things called siege weapons, and got stunned, they will not notice the situation that will happen next. That was highly likely possible.

But, the Lord of the town, who was possibly a human, might know of the horror of the siege weapons. Thus, it would make him panic and organize a cavalry attack in hurry.

The Lord of the town came from the same country as Sano. Mireille had never met, or even seen him. But strangely enough, his panicked face seemed to float clearly in her mind.

[TL: what is love? Baby don’t hurt me]

The catapult group that was in front had already crossed the 2 km point.

Her body became hot. Every step her horse took was like firewood added to further heat up her body.

Then, Mireille was seized by a feeling that made her want to run away. When someone goes onto the battlefield, they should already have the intention to kill. She wondered how she should feel about it. She wanted to know especially because this was her first battle. Then, her eyes noticed the ladders that were being carried by infantrymen.

But, Mireille thought that the ladders were useless. She touched the handle of her sword and grasped it tightly to suppress her excitement. She must lead the cavalry that she led here with strength. She must let out this heat.

“We are almost there! Be cautious!” Mireille shouted at the knights. After she shouted, even though it was only a bit, the heat was reduced.

When other people looked at the knights’ expression now, they could see that everyone had calmed down.

The true nature of that unknown magic had already been revealed, that it was actually a personal weapon. In addition, there were restrictions on the number of times it could be used, so it would not be possible to use it against an army. On the other hand, the rain of arrows that poured down would be more terrifying. This was what everyone thought.

But, with the infantry acting as a shield, there was nothing to be afraid of. The enemy’s tactic will likely be similar like last time — they probably will only shoot the commander.

Everyone was calm as they thought about how weak the enemy was.

The army had crossed the 1.5 km mark.

Mireille suddenly turned her face to the sky. A clear blue sky was spread out above them. She had noticed that since they arrived here, there was only a few clouds in the sky, much unlike the Kingdom of Sandra. Because of that, the sky

felt much larger than usual. Compared to the sky, how small was this land?

Her body began to boil again. Although she would never reach the sky, she would like to do what she wanted on land. That was the humans' dream.

The battle today was only the prelude. Signs of war had already been seen on this continent. How far can she herself go? Wielding this sword, she will engrave her fame deep into this continent.

Mireille heaved a sigh while overflowing with ambition.

—— Then, at that time.

From the front, a large 'boom' sound resounded, and it occurred several times too.

(What?) Mireille thought as she turned to observe the front of the army.

As she looked at the front, the sound of something flying could be heard. Then, the sound of something breaking echoed suddenly while a big cloud of dust whirled about unceasingly.

"What?! What happened?!" While suppressing her agitated horse, Mireille shouted.

However, no one responded her. It was clearly an abnormal situation. Soon, the cloud of dust faded quickly, and the answer naturally came.

"Wh…" Mireille's voice was stuck in her throat.

There were no signs of catapults at the place where the catapults should be.

"What was that just now?!"

"The catapults were smashed?!"

The Red Dragon Knights started stirring up.

—— Don’t be confused!

Mireille opened her mouth, but the words she wanted to say did not come out. Mireille herself was also in dismay.

What on earth happened?

Most of the catapults were destroyed. Behind the catapults where the oil pots were placed, a large fire had erupted, encouraged by the oil that had splattered out. The screams of people being roasted by the flames could be heard.

She didn’t understand. She didn’t see anything. But, there was one thing that she understood — they had just been attacked by the enemy.

The army naturally stopped. But, there were still some catapults that were undamaged.

What should she do? Do they protect the remaining catapults? But, from what? How?

“Vice Leader Thomas!” This time, her voice came out properly. Her feminine voice resounded loudly. It jolted the panicked soldiers.

“Leader Mireille!” The one who answered was Vice leader Thomas, who took a step forward from the center of Red Dragon Knights.

Mireille was leading the right half of the Knight Order, while Thomas was entrusted with the left half.

“Divide the cavalry! Dispatch them to scatter in front of the stone walls to disturb the enemy! We will become decoys! Use speed to not let enemy focus on you!” Mireille commanded.

Whether they attacked or retreated now, Mireille thought that both were bad options as it was right now.

The army hadn’t moved yet. The soldiers did not understand what happened. If there was a second attack, then next target would be the humans, which why the running horses would become decoys.

It was a childish trick. They know that there was no point in moving the cavalry this soon. But, if they can earn that bit of time, Barbarodem might be able to make a decision by then. Also, if they got close, they might be able to understand what kind of attack the enemy just made.

Then, the ‘boom’ sound rang again from above the stone walls.

Mireille stiffed her body unconsciously. Numerous loud sounds reached her ears. The source of the closest one came from close by.

When Mireille turned to the left, Thomas, who had lost the lower half of his body, was blown away, and fell onto the ground with a thud.

[TL: RIP Thomas]

“Ah…” Her body froze.

Nevertheless, Mireille did not release her reins. She skillfully handled her horse that was about to go wild. It could be said that this was the result of her daily training.

Screams erupted from people around her. The horses were rampaging

around, and a person was just thrown off. There were people who lost their arms while other lost their legs.

Then, coldly and mercilessly, the ‘boom’ sound resounded from the beastmen’s town once more.

◆

The point of view of a knight from the Red Dragon Knight Order.

What happened?

He remembered that there was a heavy sound from the front. Before he realized it, he already fell down. He placed his palm on the ground and tried to stand up by stretching and bending his arms.

But, it was strange. He couldn’t stand up like he usually did. Looking down, he saw that his legs were gone.

“A… Aaaa…” He could only cry out weakly.

(Why?) The knight thought.

This should have been an easy battle. The cavalry should be mowing down the enemies as they come out from the town. It was supposed to be just that.

The unknown magic doesn’t exist. That should have just been a story.

(Then why..? That’s right, this must be a dream. I can’t hear any sounds because this is just a dream. It is a dream, this must be a dream. Let’s sleep now. We will depart tomorrow.)

—— The knight stopped breathing.

◆

The shell that was launched from the beastmen town broke the catapults in the blink of an eye. The battering rams at the back were also crushed.

Many of the siege weapons lost their functions with a single bombardment. Then, a shell rained down on the soldiers next.

When the shell landed, the impact triggered the fuse, causing the shell to explode. Just by the sound of the explosion, a person's eardrums would be ruptured, and they would also be blown away by the explosion. The iron fragments of the exploded shell would then be sent to the surrounding area of the impact point due to the the shockwave, and the soldiers within that area would be severely injured.

Blood and flesh scattered onto the ground. The scream of the soldiers echoed. The attack released from beastmen's town took the soldiers' arms, legs, and lives away.

'Boom!' 'Boom!' 'Boom!' The heavy sounds could be heard from above the stone walls intermittently.

Agonized cries resounded in the battlefield. This place had become hell within a short period of time. The earsplitting cries could be heard in many places as the soldiers rolled around on the earth before their cries ended as their death finally arrived.

Even so, the army of the Kingdom of Sandra still didn't move. The one who should sounded a retreat gong already fell victim to the shells. The commanders' voices were also being drowned out by the screams and the sounds of explosions.

Many people from the cavalry had already been thrown off by their horses, which became violent and out of control due to the loud sounds and fear.

Although it was invisible attack from the sky, a blow from the highly reactive projectile wasn't very large. But, the person-in-charge could not notice the extent of the damage, and was not able to take action.

The humans stood at the spot as if they were receiving God's judgment.

Then, one cavalryman stood up and turned his back to the army. That person had a tiger beard, and was riding a huge horse that weighed around 1.3 tons. His name had echoed through the world as he overwhelmingly defeated his enemies with his halberd — it was Barbarodem, the General of the Yellow Dragon Knight Order.

When Barbarodem approached the stone walls, innumerable arrows poured down from atop of stone walls. However, they were repelled like annoying flies by his halberd and his thick armor that looked like several iron plates laminated together.

“Beastmen! Fujiwara! I apologize for not following the etiquette of war!” Barbarodem shouted.

The apologies began. But, his roars couldn’t beat the cannons’ sounds.

Originally, war on this continent started only with the declaration of war. After that, the location would be decided, along with the date and time to start the war. This was the basic etiquette.

But this time, what the Kingdom of Sandra did was a one-sided invasion. It could be said that this act was equivalent to a surprise attack.

But, for the Kingdom of Sandra, this town, although not having any humans living in it, was treated as their own territory. For that reason, the war against the beastmen’s town was treated as civil war, and there was no need for a declaration of war.

The arrows stopped pouring down, and the sounds of cannonfire disappeared.

Barbarodem had a smile when his intentions were successfully conveyed.

“My name is Barbarodem, the general of the Yellow Dragon Knight Order! Enemy General Fujiwara! I wish to have one on one duel with you!” He declared.

A one on one duel was common in this world. It was an act which could also be said to be the flower of the battlefield. It was a knight's duty to respond to a one on one duel and accept it.

That was why Barbarodem bet on this. The army of the Kingdom of Sandra was already in disarray. Their defeat was inevitable. But, if he was able to capture the enemy general, then there will be peace. That was what Barbarodem thought.

And then ——

Bang Bang

That sound echoed twice. It was the sound of rifle shots from the top of stone walls. It goes without saying what the objective was.

"Argh..!" Blood dribbled out from Barbarodem's mouth.

A total of four bullets were fired from the rifle, and three of them penetrated into Barbarodem.

The halberd fell to the ground, clattering loudly. Following that, the horse reins slipped out from Barbarodem's hands.

"…Ru… Run away…" After choking out those words, he fell off from his horse.

Barbarodem was a hero of the Kingdom of Sandra. It was hard to forget his huge physique even if people only glanced at it once.

His martial art was called Ikki Tousen. When on the battlefield, Barbarodem was like a flag that emitted an intense light.

[TL: Ikki Tousen…. That is ecchi manga/anime]

His existence was known even by infantrymen living in rural areas. Those who stood on the same battlefield as him spoke of his achievements like it was their own. When Barbarodem charged as the vanguard, the soldiers would follow behind him without hesitation. He was like a dazzling light piercing through the darkness.

That Barbarodem was now dead.

That became the trigger.

“U-UWAAAAAAA!!!” As if the invisible rope tying him had loosened, one of the infantrymen cried out and tried to push other people out of his way to get out of this place.

The other soldiers also started to move as if a dam had broken.

Run away! Run away! Run away! Run away! Run away! Run away! Run away! Run away! Run away! Run away! Run away! Run away! Run away!

The soldiers switched from confusion to panic. But behind them, a dull sound began to ring again. The iron bullets were fired mercilessly at those who were escaping.

◆

The forces of the Kingdom of Sandra collapsed. Everyone escaped from that world of fear. The first ones who returned to the camp were the cavalrymen who didn’t lose their horse. They weren’t exempted from that fear. They returned with frustrated thoughts while trying to control their rampaging horses.

When the cavalrymen entered the camp just now, they fell down from their horses, and grovelled on the ground at the same time.

They couldn’t hear the artillery sounds in the camp. Did they stop shooting? Or maybe the sound doesn’t reach this place?

“What… What is that thing?!” One knight shouted.

He was still immersed in complete terror.

They witnessed an attack from more than 1 km away. They couldn’t resist and escaped with their horses. But, the cavalrymen that were a mere 2 km from the town were annihilated. It was like they were trying to block the escape path of those who survived.

Flesh were scattered around, and the earth was soaked by the rain of blood. But, the knights still swing their whips recklessly and escaped.

The terrified knights became nauseated just by recalling it. Comrades that had stayed together till yesterday were dead without being able to resist. They don’t even know what happened. There was no one alive at the spot where the thunder-like sound echoed.

Their knees trembled. Their teeth chattered. There were also some who began to cry.

Their expression of fear varied, but everyone uniformly feared the attack which they had never seen or heard before.

“Barbarodem-dono! Did anyone see Barbarodem-dono?!” Among the soldiers, someone cried out in a panic.

It was Mireille. She was also the same as the others, her face is pale. But, she still cried out while looking for Barbarodem.

“Has anyone seen Barbarodem-dono?!” She screamed at the top of her voice.

Mireille didn’t know what to do. That was why she wanted to rely on Barbarodem, who was a commander-in-chief who had great experience due to

his long service in the military.

When Mireille found the deputy commander of the Yellow Dragon Knights, she excitedly asked for Barbarodem's location. But, the answer was completely different from what she expected.

"Barbarodem-dono… Probably already… He said that if he doesn't return, we should immediately retreat back to our country…" The deputy commander broke down.

"No way…" Mireille felt as though all the strength had left her body.

Barbarodem was dead. Mireille will promoted to commander-in-chief.

"Uu… Oeee..!" Mireille vomitted on the spot.

But, no one here blamed her. It was common to vomit on the battlefield, especially when it was such a gruesome battle.

"Is this the war… Is this the war that I desired..!" She slammed her fist onto the ground.

Mireille was tortured by a sense of helplessness. When hit by a catastrophe, and they were in despair from the things they couldn't resist, all they could do was vent their anger at the gods.

After that, Mireille and the deputy commander of the Yellow Dragon Knights discussed about what they should do from now on. Since the horses were running at full speed since just now, they can't move anymore for now. In addition, the soldiers were scattered in all directions.

Eventually, after two days of serious discussion, they concluded that they should retreat back to the north.

The soldiers in camp worried.

How far could that attack reach? Perhaps it might be able to reach this place?

The soldiers spent their time trembling in fear whenever night came.

But, they still didn’t know that the enemy attack had only just begun.

Chapter 038 - War ②

This is MC and Sano's POV.

---

30 mountain cannons spewed out white smoke noisily when used against thousands of enemy soldiers who came to attack the town. The shells shot out killed the humans as if they were mere bugs.

I was gazing at this scene atop the north gate.

One year. It had been one year since the trade with the Kingdom of Sandra began. I had been preparing for this battle since then.

From the goods obtained by trading with the Kingdom of Sandra, the cannons at the north, east and west had increased by 30 at each side, to a total of 90 cannons. Since there was no need to worry about money, the ammunition [Long ranged explosive shell] were prepared such that they could be used until the enemy was annihilated.

Furthermore, the beastmen increased their proficiency with the cannons through training. In addition, I improved their martial arts proficiency.

We also cooperated with each other through the wired communication installed at each castle gate, resulting in a smooth and efficient defense.

With all these preparations, it could be said the town's battle preparation was perfect.

Even the rough estimation of the enemy force had already been grasped.

Romatto, who was once a captive here, proudly boasted how great the Knight Orders were, so I was able to estimate the strength and limits of the human army.

The battles in this world were not very different from the medieval times of the previous world. Certainly, when compared with the humans from the previous world, there were some humans who somehow exceeded the limits of human beings. Nevertheless, they would not be able to win no matter how

many weapons they had.

That is why, I think that the results before my eyes were obvious.

Then, the enemy retreated at last. They scattered in all directions like skittering spiders.

But, I won't stop firing the cannons. I kept bombarding the retreating enemies with the shells. I will strike them down thoroughly here. I will suffer losses if I don't do it.

The cannons were still killing the enemies without any change. At such a time, the face of the man from the same country who had appeared three days ago suddenly popped up in his mind.

His name was Tsutomu Sano. Honestly, I think he was a suspicious person. I was bothered by his behaviour and words, as well as when he looked at me. Perhaps that might have just been my imagination.

At any rate, we're enemies now. Even if the fact he's someone from the same country as I may bother me in the past, but now, the town is far more important.

That's right. Even if we're from the same hometown, he's a total stranger after all. It is hard to compare him with those whom you've lived together with for several years.

Well, since we've met once, I'd like for him to survive. I wonder if he's near the area where the cannons were being fired randomly.

"Stop shooting!" I ordered.

Since many soldiers already escaped the range of the cannons, I finally stopped the bombardment. I observed the situation with the binoculars first, but all I could see were heaps of corpses lying around.

The results of the battle has been decided. The casualties here were zero. Besides, thanks to the enemy who charged head on, there were no damages to the ranch, the new houses on the west side, as well as the farms on the east side. It would not be wrong to say that it was a complete victory.

I ordered the the Kingdom of to collect the ammunition, and left some people

on the top of stone wall. I also ordered the others to gather behind the north gate. It's time to loot the enemy from here on. The weapons and armors that the enemy wore were valuable items. Also, let's treat the enemy soldiers who have been injured.

[TL: damn fujiwara you are such a S, leaving them alive and suffer and will not let them has easy dead.]

"Shall we go?" I opened the gate after instructing the beastmen on what to do.

Since I am anxious about being counterattacked, I boarded the [type 96 armored car]. In addition, the wolfmen group were split into two [type 73 heavy duty truck].

I drove the armored car out while the beastmen advanced slowly in a group with caution.

There was the corpse of the enemy general outside the right side of the gate.

His name was Barbarodem, right? There was a big horse grieving the death of its master next to him, nuzzling his neck while whining softly.

I could feel some pain in my chest. Was this because I had Catherine as well?

As we advanced forward, I saw some of them standing up and running away out of sight. Those who stayed there were trying to overcome the cannon. There were only a few people, so I didn't chase them.

Eventually, a miserable spectacle unfolded before my eyes. I opened the upper hatch from the driving seat, and peeped out from there. It's a wretched scene that made me want to avert my eyes. The scene was crisply seared into my brain.

"Uuu…"

"Hurt... It hurts..."

I could still hear the groans from the surviving people. But, I will not avert my eyes. I will not close my ears. Because, if I lost this battle, the ones who suffered would the beastmen and I.

"Humans from the Kingdom of Sandra! If you don't want to die, don't resist!

We will treat the wounded! If you resist, we will kill without mercy!” I shouted with all my might.

Of course, when I discussed about this with the beastmen before we set out, everyone had strongly objected. Since the humans had attacked one-sidedly, they appealed for me to just massacre them.

It was reasonable, I thought. However, I also had some counter-arguments for the beastmen.

One, many of the soldiers who came here were drafted. They didn’t come here to attack by their own will. They could never go against the orders of their King or Lords. They didn’t have any right to make their own decisions. That is why it could be said that the militia were victims.

Two, if we captured the knights, they might be able to be ransomed. However, not all the knights could be ransomed. For example, Sano was a knight, but he wasn’t a noble. But, there might still be some nobles like Romatto amongst the survivors.

Three, by nursing the wounded humans and saving their lives, it might be possible to create a bridge between the beastmen and humans. In fact, Romatto became friends with the beastmen after being held captive here. It might be a superficial relationship, but it was a relationship where they could laugh with each other.

Four, when they returned, they might be harassed by the kingdom because of the after effects of battle. I think that when they return after suffering a wound that hindered their lives, such as the loss of limbs, they will become a burden to the country. Unlike in modern society, there was no social welfare system here. Also, there were very few things which disabled people can work on. They will have to depend on someone to live. Both the injured and the people around them will start to have arguments and feel dissatisfaction. Where will all those negative feelings go? Perhaps that would be more cruel than killing someone.

After hearing all these considerations, the beastmen reluctantly agreed.

Thus, the looting and rescue operations began. After applying simple first aid on the injured people, they were placed onto a cart that was pulled by camels, and brought to the new residential area in the west. Meanwhile, the armors

and swords that were stripped from them were stacked in the truck.

I think I can leave everything here to the beastmen without worrying.

The next thing to deal with would be the enemies who ran away. We've already located the enemy camp. I planned to launch a night attack when they're asleep. Even if they've already moved from the camp, we will still chase and attack.

I don't intend to let them off easily. The consequences for invading this land... I will engrave them onto your body and soul.

◆

On the battlefield where the thunderous roar and scream echoed, there was a person who was holding their breath. It was Tsutomu Sano of the Red Dragon Knight Order.

Sano hid himself under the shadow of a dead horse as he closed his eyes and trembled. An intense explosion sound was heard again nearby. Each time he heard that, it made him twitch and curl up tightly.

What was that, he thought.

An intense sound echoed, and someone died. He thought that it was magic or something, but he couldn't collect his thoughts together from fear. He only hoped for this to end sooner.

Eventually, the sounds stopped and it remained silent for a few minutes. Sano raised his face quietly. Numerous corpses and injured people were lying around. There were several people who were still standing, but they appeared to be barely standing.

At first, Sano thought that all the soldiers of the Kingdom of Sandra Kingdom had died, but the number of those who had fallen was too small. So, he concluded that they probably escaped.

Sano laid on his back. He did not have the energy to move anymore. Only a satisfied feeling of having successfully survived occupied his heart.

While watching the sky while lying in that pool of blood, he thought.

(I am alive.)

[TL:*highlight on your own risk ‘For now’][TLC: *kick this guy’s ass to the sky] [ED: I hope you choke on your own shit, Sano.]

Survived. He survived that hellish world. He could still hear groans full of suffering around him. He guessed that they had suffered severe wounds to the extent that they couldn’t move.

However, when Sano moved his hands and feet, he found that he still had a healthy and normal body. Inside his mind, the feeling that this was expected for someone special started to well up.

Then, there was a change in the surrounding noise. It’s the sound of despair.

In curiosity, he raised the upper part of body and saw that the faraway gate of the beastmen town was open. What emerged from there were...

“Vehicles..?” He muttered.

(What... What does this mean?!)

Sano was dismayed.

Three vehicles were advancing towards him slowly. Behind them were beastmen with weapons in their hands.

(I will be killed if I stay here..!)

Sano thought so, and unconsciously pulled out his sword.

Of course, that sword was Suzunose’s [Considerably Good Sword].

But then, he felt a sense of uneasiness for a moment. Sano looked at his sword, and was surprised. When he unsheathed the sword, it was broken at the middle.

(Why?)

He wondered. However, upon looking at the sheath on his waist, he understood immediately. A piece of iron fragment was stabbed into the sheath.

“What the hell is this?!” He grunted.

When the shell exploded, the fragments pierced through the corpses and hit Sano. However, this [Considerably Good Sword] protected Sano from the fragments.

“Shit! This piece of junk!” He growled.

Sano threw away the [Considerably Good sword], removed the sheath from his belt, and ran. On the way, he also took a sword from a corpse, and headed north.

“Haa... Haa... Haa...” He panted furiously.

No matter how painful his lungs felt, he did not stop running. Eventually, when his body hit its limit, Sano fell down on the spot.

(What... Was that?! Wh-What was that?!)

He thought while adjusting his breath.

What Sano saw was obviously a vehicle. It was a military vehicle to boot. Now, he understood. The enemy’s attack was not magic at all, it was a weapon from his previous world — a cannon.

(Shit! That fucking Fujiwara! He deceived me!)

Sano was furious. He was deceived, and upon remembering that Nobuhide had weapons besides guns, his anger became even more violent.

However, Nobuhide didn’t deceive him in particular. He merely did not say anything.

“I will never forgive him...” Resentment accumulated inside Sano’s heart.

But, there was no way to clear that resentment now. Anyway, his top priority now was to live. However, even this was quite difficult.

Sano understood that he could not return to the Red Dragon Knight Order. The day when he returned from the town as surrender messenger, Sano told the commanders that there were only a few guns, and even those were not worth talking about. The enemy was weak, he said. There were no special weapons beside the guns.

(How could I have known that there was a cannon! Isn’t that cheating!?)

Sano’s anger flared up once more.

(What is his card in the first place?! [Guns], [Cannon], and [Car]? Just how many did he get?!)

What he received from God was [Sword Talent] [Small] [★]. Only that. Sano cursed Nobuhide and God inside his heart about this unfairness.

After a while, Sano intended to return back to the north. Regarding food, he wait for when there was no army in the village before stealing it. Regarding the horse, if he walked along the riverside, he should be able to find one or two horses that strayed away from the herd.

Sano slowly walked in the desert. Even though he was not hurt, his body felt heavy. Even so, he would die if he did not walk. So, he kept walking.

Before long, it was night time. As he rested his bottom on the ground, he searched the bag on his waist. There was half a day's worth of food in the bag.

Sano gnawed at the dried meat he took out. Until he could get more food, he needed to ration it. Hunger further amplified his hatred toward Nobuhide.

(Fujiwara, I will never forgive you... I will definitely kill you...)

No, it was not only Nobuhide. The God who sent him to this world and gave him such low grade card, even the commander who naively attacked head on and lost... His anger was also aimed at the kingdom, including the king who planned this war.

[TL: the birth of anti hero mc?]

[TLC: nah. only anti-hero at least. I really...realllly hope he died though just died without anything more. This guy annoy the hell out of me]

[ED: If this guy becomes anti-hero MC, I swear I will drop this book. Trash like this should die early on.]

Blaming someone else for his current misfortune. That was the man called Sano.

At such a time, Suzunose's unreliable face appeared in Sano mind.

(That is right, I should return to Suzunose's place.)

He will show favor to Suzunose. It was thanks to himself that Suzunose could be alive in this world afterall, Sano thought seriously.

(It has been a while, so that guy should have calmed down—)

Suddenly, the sound of something stepping on the ground echoed. With his heart jolting anxiously, Sano held his sword and jumped up. He turned to face the source of the sound.

There were countless shining eyes. They were large cats called Lynx.

[TL: the first test to become anti hero mc starto!]

“It seems like I do not need to worry about meals from now on.” Sano grinned and pulled the sword from its sheath.

Although it was dark, he could clearly see the appearance of the lynxes clearly. Their unique ears identified them as lynxes.

He did not hold the sword vertically, but sideways instead since there were multiple enemies. Sano’s instincts from [Sword Talent] told him that it was important to counterattack from the side.

Four lynxes gradually moved closer. However, Sano had plenty of room to maneuver.

He had slaughtered hundreds of animals up to this point. Sano had even killed a bear. Thus, Sano thought they were nothing to worry about.

“I will give you names. You, you, you, and you too... All of you are Fujiwara. I will kill you.” He laughed maniacally.

At that moment, the four lynxes attacked at once.

“Small fries!” He yelled.

Along with that, he swung the sword horizontally from left to right. It sliced through the paw and then the throat of the first one, and broke the skull of the second one. As for the third one...

“...Eh?” Sano raised his brows disbelievingly.

The sword didn’t break through the skull of the second one, and stopped after ripping into its head.

With the weight of second Lynx at the end of the sword, even with both hands holding it, Sano was still swayed by its weight.

At this time, the third lynx bumped into him from the side of second lynx and

broke his balance.

Then, the fourth lynx jumped on Sano fiercely, and bit his left upper arm.

“GuaaaAAA!!” He screamed.

Sano, who was bitten by the lynx, bent over, breaking his posture. With the shock from the pain, he let go the sword without thinking.

“These pieces of shit! Get the hell away from me!” While falling down, he desperately tried to peel the lynx off with both of his arms.

But, the lynx stuck to Sano closely, and refused to let go even if he bashed it with all his strength.

Blood flowed rapidly from Sano’s arm. He gradually lost his strength. Then, Sano could see the third lynx is approaching from the edges of his field of vision.

“Are you serious...” He mumbled, still in shock.

The third lynx ran, aiming at Sano’s neck. Sano tried to protect his neck with his free right hand, and ended up handing his forearm straight into his opponent’s mouth.

Time passed while he was being bitten by the two lynxes. Once a carnivore bites its prey, it will not let go. He knew he would die if he kept bleeding without being able to stop it. That was the cruelty of nature.

Even after being bitten by two lynxes, Sano refused to die this easily. However, he still felt death approaching slowly.

“This is... A lie. I don’t want to... I don’t want to die... In a place like this...” He gasped, life fading from him quickly.

Although Sano was an amateur swordsman, he was able to kill a boar and bear. He could break through their thick flesh and bones. Normally, even a skilled swordsman found it difficult to kill a wild boar, not to mention a bear. Then, why was Sano able to do it?

Everything was because of both the [Considerably Good Sword] and [Sword Talent] [Small] skill.

Sano’s sword style was too dependent on the . A swift style relying on the

quality of the sword - that was Sano’s sword style.

For that reason, when the sharp [Considerably Good Sword] was switched to the blunt normal sword, Sano‘s swordsmanship was reduced to a third rate swordplay that was only fast but had no power.

“Someone... Help me... God...” He looked at the stars floating in the sky as he muttered. He prayed to God for one more chance.

[GOD: not today][Other GOD: you just dissed me][Death GOD: Come to Papa...]

“Fuji... Wara... Suzu... Nose...” He gasped.

Anyone’s fine, as long as they could help him.

(I will not think about revenge anymore.)

Thinking so, he called out Nobuhide’s name desperately.

(Please help me this time.)

Thinking so, he called out Suzunose’s name pleadingly.

“...He... ...lp...” But, his fading voice did not reach anyone.

Chapter 039 - War ③

Night fell.

Behind the north gate, an armored vehicle and two trucks were lined up with their headlight turned on. In front of the vehicles were 32 Wolf tribesmen, and two drivers inside the trucks, and 30 Cat tribesmen — a total of 62 people.

From now on, we will be performing night raids.

Due to the Wolf tribe's reliability and Cat tribe's good night vision, I asked their respective chief to participate in this night raid. In other words, those lining up were the ones chosen by their chiefs.

Standing in front of them, I observed each of their faces. All of them seemed to be sufficiently motivated for this raid.

Then, my gaze stopped on one of the selected members. Mira was standing in the Wolf tribe's line.

Unlike when she ran away from the town, Mira now had an adult-like air to her. She looked serious while she only staring forward.

(Does she still have strong resentment against humans?)

I wondered if I should take her off from the roster, but Chief Jiharu would not have chosen her thoughtlessly. I am going to believe that she will not be seized by any personal grudges and disrupt the pace of the raid.

Thus, I turned to face everyone and began to speak.

"From now on, we will attack the enemy. However, our aim is not to kill the enemy."

Everyone listened to my words silently. It is likely because of the self-consciousness of being specially chosen. If it's like usual, it will just become a funny story.

I continue talking.

"This is a battle to crush the enemy's heart until it shatters. I want to make

them think “I don’t want to fight anymore!”. Well, to put it simply, it’s just harassment continued with even more harassment. Therefore, it would be stupid to get injured because of such a fight, so let’s go with safety first. Now then, get on!”

The tribesmen got into the two trucks by my command. Also, I decided to attach a mountain cannon with some rope behind the truck.

[First car, all members are on board.]

[Second car, all the member completed on board.]

In the driver's seat of armored car, the reports came from the transceiver that was handed to each driver.

“Then, let’s depart.” I commanded as I stepped on the accelerator.

“Be careful.” Chief Jiharu, who came to the side of the gate to see us off, advised.

With my armored car acting as the vanguard, we passed through the gate into the wilderness. We were only 4 km from the enemy’s camp. To prevent the truck from turning due to the weight of the cannon, we proceeded down the road cautiously.

After about 10 minutes passed, we were finally near the enemy camp.

Then, the sound of a bell ringing echoed from the camp. It should be a signal to warn the soldiers about night raids. Because our headlights were on, the opponent could easily see us approaching them.

Well, there’re no problems even if that happens.

Each car stopped about 500 meters from the camp. The beastmen got off while the artillerymen prepared the mountain cannon. I moved from the driver’s seat to the cupola (gun turret) that was equipped with the [12.7mm heavy machine gun M2].

[12.7mm heavy machine gun M2] 600 million yen (list price 6 million yen)

I have already learned about how to operate it from the SDF’s manual. Along with the large diameter, 12.7 mm bullets, it had superior rapid fire and an effective range exceeding 1 km.

Honestly speaking, I think most enemies can be defeated if we have this. However, I will use this in this night raid only if the enemy is headed here.

Before long, the preparation of the mountain cannon was completed.

“Prepare to shoot... Fire!” By my signal, a thunderous sound echoed from the barrel of the mountain cannon.

The bombardment wasn’t really aimed to any position in particular. It was fine as long as it landed within the enemy’s campsite.

◆

— Nighttime.

Inside a tent of the camp, Mireille rested her body on the couch without removing her armor. Her eyes are closed. However, she was not asleep. She was unable to sleep whenever she thought of the enemy.

And then, the bell installed at the watchtower rang furiously.

(No way...)

Mireille rose up.

However, that thought swiftly became reality.

“It’s the enemy! The enemy has arrived!” A loud announcement could be heard from outside.

“Kuh!” Mireille grunted as she took the sword and came out from the tent, obviously distressed by the warning.

“Escape! We’ll be killed if we don’t!”

“Let’s get out of here quickly!”

It was chaotic outside. No one wanted to fight, and were just trying to escape from the camp. There was no way to resist the enemy like this. Mireille’s first thought was to retreat immediately.

However, there were things that you have to take note of before you retreat.

“Someone! What will happen to the supplies?! Is there anyone who knows about that!?”

For the time being, the management of the supplies was the most important matter. Naturally it's because people can't live without food.

However, no one seemed to hear Mireille's voice. Everyone just escaped to the north as quickly as they could.

"Oi, you!" Mireille caught a knight's arm as he tried to go past her.

The knight looked irritated as he glared at Mireille. That attitude was not that of someone looking at his superior at all. But, there was no time to condemn him now.

"I am going to see what happened to food supplies now. Follow me." She ordered.

"...Go." He muttered.

"What?" Mireille stared at him.

"Let go of me!" The knight swung his arm to try to break free from Mireille's grip.

The knight no longer cared about the relationship between subordinate and superiors. But, he did not manage to break free because Mireille was stronger than ordinary people because she enhanced her actions with magic.

"That is the job of supply troops! If you are so worried about it, you can go alone!" The knight spat, glaring at her.

Mireille didn't hold onto the knight's arm any longer. She just watched the back of the escaping knight in a daze.

Then, from the south, thunderous booms could be heard.

(It's 'that' sound..!)

The sound of the invisible attack that was heard during the battle with the beastmen town...

Shortly afterwards, an intense sound that rattled the brain echoed from within the camp. This increased the soldiers' confusion even more, and everyone fled from the camp even more desperately.

For example, a soldier took Mireille's horse, which was tied before her tent,

and escaped. Mireille couldn't blame him, and could only stare blankly into space.

From the south, the booming sound could be heard again, and a loud sound echoed from somewhere inside the camp.

The fear from the battle during daytime resurfaced inside Mireille's chest.

But then, when she calmed down and listened, Mireille noticed something - there were only two sources of the sound.

At the beastmen town, there were dozens of those attack sounds. However, only two could be heard now.

Mireille thought that if the army could stand together, perhaps there was still a chance to win. But, she shook her head immediately after that.

(It's too late to say that now. With the army's situation right now, it is already hopeless.)

It doesn't look like an army anymore. The reason was most likely because she was still inexperienced as a general.

(If Barbarodem was still alive, what would he do?)

While thinking about that, Mireille reflected on her own worthlessness.

"Damn it!" Mireille cursed and shook away the unnecessary thoughts.

Now was not the time to think about that. She needed to think about food instead now.

Food was essential.

It was about 25 km to the northern village from here. Even so, in this situation, there was nobody who could transport any food. Therefore, Mireille rushed to the food storehouse.

When she arrived at the food storehouse, there was a farmer soldier (militia) loading food into a cart. It seemed that the other side also noticed her as their eyes met.

"Knight-sama." The soldier mumbled and lowered his head, however, his hand did not stop.

“You did not escape?” Mireille said as she approached him.

“Hehe, everyone will become hungry, no? I am still a supply corps squad leader even if the other four have already escaped.”

The militia soldier had reddish-brown skin. His hair was messy, and his jaw was lined with unshaven stubble. Even when he smiled, there was nothing about him that could be described as handsome. But, Mireille thought that he was a much better “knight” than anyone.

“I will help.” She insisted.

That is all I can do.

“Ah, could you get a horse to draw the cart then?” He asked.

“Ah, alright.” Mireille followed the man’s instructions, and ran to the stables.

(There... There was still someone. A soldier who was trying to fulfill his role.)

Mireille’s heart became warm the moment she thought of that.

Afterwards, when she arrived at the stables, there are no more horses. She wondered if someone already took them. Mireille looked at the first, second, and third stables in the camp, but they were all empty.

Then, at the fourth one...

There was only one horse that remained untouched. The horse was extremely agitated, rampaging while trying to break the reins that was tied to a stake.

She wondered if no one came closer to it because it was dangerous.

Mireille grabbed the horse’s reins and shouted while pulling it with her arms.

“Calm down!”

They were powerful words.

The horse lowered its head for the moment. The horse knew that Mireille was a strong warrior, and became obedient.

“Alright, good boy.” Mireille stroked the horse’s neck.

Mireille pulled the horse, and headed toward the food storehouse. Even though it would be much better to use a big horse to pull the cart, she doesn’t

have that luxury of nitpicking right now.

They marched at a quick pace through the camp.

There were no people left anymore. However, she could still hear the sound of the enemy's attack. It seemed that there was no fixed target for the attacks as violent sounds could be heard at various places in the camp.

Eventually, Mireille reached the food storehouse. Then, a small sound leaked out from her mouth.

"Eh..?"

She was surprised because the large tent which was used as the food storehouse had collapsed, and the cart of food had also disappeared.

No, that was not it. The cart did not disappear. There were definitely broken pieces of the cart scattered everywhere. In other words, the enemy's attack had reached this place while she was gone.

And then—

"Aaa...." Mireille's lips trembled.

A leg could be seen at the entrance of the collapsed tent. Whose leg was that?

Mireille rolled up the tent curtain with trembling arms. It was the militia soldier collapsed there, bleeding profusely.

"Oi! You!" She approached him and shook his shoulder roughly, but there was no response.

It was natural because there was a big hole in his stomach.

"Aah... AAAaAA..!" She screamed, almost maniacal in her frenzied state.

(Why?!)

The enemy's attack only sounded twice at a time. There were plenty of other places in this wide camp. Why here of all places?!

She did not understand, and that feeling that didn't know where to go, began to well up within Mireille's chest.

“God! Aah, God!” Mireille cried out toward the sky. She was grieving. “What did we do?! Why did you give such trials to us!”

[TL: you know what you did]

She couldn’t stop crying. In this wide camp, the enemy attack that ‘coincidentally’ happened at the place where the militia was located could only mean that this was God’s will.

Was the current state of the battle with the beastmen also the work of God?! Mireille vented her feelings towards the sky.

But, there was no way a reply would come from the sky. Mireille cried for a while before taking a bag which contained with food near her, and hopped onto the horse.

She noticed that the sound of the attacks had stopped. Fire arrows poured from the rear, and the camp began to burn.

“Farewell.” She said good bye to the unknown militia soldier before riding out on the galloping horse.

The horse advanced towards the north. On the way, Mireille shouted at those she passed by.

“To the north! Move to the north as far as your legs can carry you!”

The enemy took the trouble to attack their camp. So, it was inevitable that they would pursue those who escaped.

When Mireille thought about how many people could survive, her heart felt empty. But unexpectedly, there were no enemy pursuit.

The distance to the northern village was about 25 km. About 5 km from camp, when Mireille gathered the soldiers and went along the river, she found that there was no enemy pursuit.

But, there was almost no food. So, they killed a few horses and turned them into food.

Everyone was exhausted. They had not slept either. But even so, they moved their legs as if being driven away by something.

And then, night turned into day. When the sun came out, the summer sun sapped their strength further. One by one, people fell behind the group.

They wondered when the village could be seen again. Mireille thought so as well as she stared at the place far away many times.

Eventually, they saw black smoke rising from the place where the village was.

No way. No way, no way, no way...

A strong sense of unease spread out within her chest.

“Kuuh!” Mireille left the group as she galloped towards the village.

Faster! Faster! And when she arrived there...

What remained was a village that had turned into ashes. The wooden objects were still burning as black smoke rose up here and there.

“Aaah...” She cried out weakly.

Mireille muttered ‘why’ in her heart. How many times has she thought that?

Mireille made her horse turn back, and returned back to the group. Other people who have caught up remained standing there. If they looked at the current state of the village, their hearts will break.

“Commander, the village..?” When she returned back to the group, one of the knights asked Mireille.

Mireille didn’t answer. She gritted her teeth as she swallowed her words. If she spoke, she felt that only weak words would come out. As a commander, she needed to be resolute.

“We will take a break here.” Mireille conveyed only that.

Everyone was able to realize what happened, but they did not say anything.

With this break, the horse which Mireille used also became food, and the group started heading north again.

It was a slow march, and the previous knight asked Mireille again.

“Commander, the next village...”

With a feeling of uneasiness, the knight didn’t finish his sentence. Maybe, the

demonic hands of the beastmen had also reached the next village too. That was why he felt uneasy.

“It should be alright. I am sure that it’ll be alright. So, let’s persevere a little bit more.” Mireille stated blankly.

Even though it was false encouragement, no one said anything as they grimly continued their trek north.

There was only anxiety in Mireille’s heart.

Chapter 040 - War ④

I drove the armored car while the two trucks formed a single file behind me. We drove through the wasteland at night, sending up clouds of sand and dust.

Eventually, we arrived at the “second” human village that was used as a supply point by the army of the Kingdom of Sandra in the south.

Regarding the village, we’d already heard the whole story from those we caught during the defense battle of the town. In order to attack the town, they sent those peasants to build a number of villages in a single line.

By the way, the first village has already been razed. At that time, no harm was done to the villagers. After the villagers were woken up with the car’s horn, we explained the defeat of Sandra’s army, made them prepare for travel quickly, and let them leave the village.

Although it was a one-sided demand, with three magnificent large vehicles before them, the villagers also could not help but escape fearfully.

Now, the second village was right in front of me. There were a lot of tents lined up, and the whole village was surrounded by wooden fences.

First, I pressed the car horn with all of my strength instead of greeting them normally. This is a quiet place, so I don’t think there would anyone who won’t wake up after this racket.

When I opened the upper hatch of the driver’s seat and listened carefully, I heard people starting to stir.

Then, the next thing I took out was the [Loudspeaker].

“The army of the Kingdom of Sandra has been defeated! Come out, chief of this village!” My voice echoed in the silent night.

After a while, the villagers appeared carrying some weapons and agricultural tools that would not be called weapons anywhere else.

The oldest man leading them was probably the chief of the village.

“Are you the chief if this village?” Even if they’re close to us, I can’t stop using [Loudspeaker]. It’s to intimidate the opponent with the volume of the voice after all.

The man nodded timidly.

[The army of the Kingdom of Sandra has been defeated by us! This is a fact! I will have you leave this village!]

“No way!” The village chief yelled, shock clear on his face while the villagers also became noisy.

“There are two choices for you right now! Stay in this place and be massacred, or escape to the north together with all your belongings! The village south of you has already been razed to the ground! Now then, what will you do?” I demanded.

Of course, I don’t intend to kill them. They are only peasants. They received aid from the country, and came to this place as settlers. In other words, they are not at fault at all.

Although they are humans of the enemy country, it’s still impossible for me to bring myself to kill the remaining people. Even if they can’t accept my words, they will be forced to leave anyway when we burn down the village.

The villagers and the village chief held a hasty discussion on the spot, and said that they’ll leave immediately before going back to prepare. Before long, after confirming that all the villagers had left, the beastmen set fire to various places with torches.

Because the air was dry, the village burnt well. The village was wrapped in bright red flames and illuminated the whole vicinity, as if it was daytime.

“Good job.” When the beastmen return, I gave words my of appreciation.

It was already just before dawn. In the pitch black sky, white light started to creep along the sky from the edge of horizon, pushing away the darkness of the night.

“Now, we will return to the town at once. Shall we take a break here before setting out?” After I said that, I took out the [Bento] from the back seat of the

armored car, and handed them to the beastmen.

Of course, they were not prepared since the beginning. I [bought] them just a few minutes ago.

[Hamburger Bento] [X63] 50,000 yen (list price 500 yen) x 63 = 3,150,000 yen (list price 31,500)

These beastmen bothered to participate in the night attack. So, I guess I could give them this little bit of luxury. Well, even though I called it luxury, it was actually at most a 500 yen convenience store bento.

Still, when everyone ate the hamburger cooked with sauce, their eyes widened and they began eating with great relish.

After the meal, the vehicles turned their course towards the town. Although the distance to the town was only 80 km or so, we went in the opposite direction of the east of the river, and went west instead because I don't want to be found by enemy soldiers yet. After taking such a long route, we finally returned back to town.

After giving the beastmen a break of half a day, we sortied again.

◆

Mireille, leading the surviving soldiers, was walking north alongside the river. Their group numbered over 1000. There was no formation at all. It was just a flock of people without order, like an unorganised mob.

And then, there was no more food left. To increase the speed of march even a little bit, both the knights and militiamen took off their armor and walked. But, in addition to the mental and physical fatigue from fighting, marching while starving was not easy, especially for the knights. They were not used to hunger.

"Commander, please take this." As Mireille walked ahead, a militiaman with red hair came to her side and spoke while holding a rather big mouse.

(Did they catch it during their retreat?)

Mireille was surprised. She also thought that they were strong despite not being knights.

"That's right, let's take a break for a while. I am fine. You can share it with

your comrades and eat it. Everyone, take a break! Drink your water properly! Don't be beaten by the heat!" Mireille shouted, and the mass of people stopped.

Some of them went to the river, others just sat down on the spot, while the rest just started doing their own things.

Mireille thought that she was tired. It was troublesome just to speak. As she sat down, she felt that the fatigue of both her mind and body was to the extent that couldn't stand up anymore. But, as the one responsible for leading the army, she needed to somehow be able to move her body.

Growwll

Her stomach rumbled. The gastric juices rose up to her throat because of hunger. But, there was nothing to eat. She just declined the mouse a while ago.

Mireille went to the waterside reluctantly, and drank as much water as she could to gloss over the hunger.

Then, a fragrant smell of burning flesh drifted there. When she looked to see if it was from that militiaman from before or not, she saw a situation occurring.

"Oi, peasant! Give me that!" At the place where the militiamen were roasting the meat around a fire, several of the knights were trying to rob them of the meat.

"What are you doing?!" Of course, Mireille went to stop them.

But, the knights merely glanced at her and ignored her. Then, one of the knights quickly took the meat stuck on the skewer, and left the group behind. The militiamen were cursing as they watched it happen.

Mireille thought about what she should do. It would be easy to simply kill those knights. But, that might cause the knights to rebel. Eventually what Mireille could only do was to apologize for the knights' misconducts.

"I'm sorry." She bowed her head low.

"No..." Even though Mireille apologized, their reply was not good. They did not seem to be convinced of her sincerity at all.

Mireille left the spot and asked herself if this was really alright? She must do

her best to avoid an internal dispute, but she ended up making trouble for the militiamen instead.

There were many knights that refuse to listen to her orders anymore. However, there were many people seeking refuge joining this group.

Mireille sighed. She thought that she could become a commander if she was strong. But, when she fell and became weak, she knew that she didn't have any value anymore.

The break was over, and the group began marching again. Although their bodies become lighter, their legs were heavy, so they did not advance as much as before.

It was unlikely for them to reach the next village within a day. Eventually, night fell, and they decided to set up camp early. This was because everyone was hardly able to sleep yesterday because of the night attack.

A night passed, and it was the afternoon of the next day. As Mireille's group plodded heavily across the wasteland, they could finally see the shadow of the next village.

But, there were only ashes floating gently around in the village.

Then, Mireille lost all the strength in her legs. One of her knees and both of her arms were on the ground. There was only dry land before her eyes. Then, it became soaked little by little, as if rain was falling.

It was Mireille's tears.

She does not even has strength to grieve anymore. Mireille thought that this was impossible. She felt like the pillar in her heart finally shattered. The stain on the ground made by her tears were exposed to the dry winds and quickly disappeared.

At that moment...

"...It ...It's the enemy! It... It's a monster!" A voice shouted from within the group.

Mireille raised her face weakly.

What she saw were giant rectangular object that were moving without

horses. There were three of them.

“What is that..?” She gasped.

Mireille was not just walking while encouraging everyone on their march till here. On the way, she had heard the story from the soldier who was at the watchtower at the time of the enemy’s night attack

What the soldiers saw were three large carriages glowing with light magic.

(Is that a big carriage? Wrong. There are no horses pulling that.)

It was a gigantic box which ran automatically. What was surprising was that despite its size, it was much faster than a horse. It could kill you easily if you got ran over by it. There was no way to fight against it.

[TL: well duh one is armored vehicles, while another two is truck that can sent you to different worlds. What did you expect?]

[ED: One does not simply fight back against the all-powerful truck-kun]

“So, only up until here, huh..?” Mireille stood up and murmured in despair.

There was no one escaping. Everyone was too exhausted both mentally and physically.

Then, the three boxes stopped at a certain distance without them running over.

And then, one man came out from the box.

Chapter 041 - End of the War

After taking rest in the town and refuelling the vehicles, the beastmen and I headed out again. Since we left the cannon we were dragging around in town, we could move at high speeds now.

We advanced to the north at the speed of 80 km/h, and finally reached the third village from south. We burned it down like in the previous day before moving tens of kilometers north, and razed the fourth village without hesitation as well.

With this, there will be no villages up to a distance of 200 km north of the town. There was still a village up north, but this will do for now. If the residents from the burned villages decided to go to other villages, they were allowed to leave without any obstructions from us.

From this point, when the soldiers got to their supply points and see that they were all razed to the ground, it will further crush their spirit. We went back south with that intention.

“We still haven’t found them.” I muttered while sitting in the driver’s seat of the armored car.

When we went back to the second village, we still didn’t see any figures, or even the shadows of the enemies. We only met the residents of the villages we’ve razed during that journey.

Wondering if they would arrive soon, we decided to hide the vehicles at the hills west of the village, and wait for the enemy soldiers. We would attack the moment they experienced despair when they saw that the village had been razed.

However, the enemy never appeared, and when night finally fell, we returned back to the town reluctantly.

After another night, we headed out early in the morning, and waited at the same place as yesterday. And then, around noon...

“Did they come?” One of the beastmen asked.

Humans appeared from the southeast. It was a group of more or less 1000 people. They weren't wearing any armor, but all of them had weapons of some sort. They were undoubtedly the people from the Kingdom of Sandra.

"All of them are staggering." I commented while crouching down on the hill, looking at the state of the enemy through the binoculars.

After the enemy was sighted, the beastmen finally felt at ease.

They look exhausted. Looking at the enemy's situation, I unconsciously smiled.

I don't mean that the misfortune of others is a good thing. While I was still humane enough to not laugh at the misfortune of those who tried to harm us, but if I had to say something to them, it'd be something like "Serves you right. you reap what you sow.".

I got inside the armored car with a satisfied smile, and told the other vehicles to depart through the transceiver.

"We will depart now. The trucks should be flanked behind the armored car."

"Roger that."

"Understood."

The beastmen replied seriously.

To give off an intimidating impression to the enemy, we advanced forward in an inverse V shape formation with the armored car in the middle.

The gigantic iron vehicles move faster than horses while raising a large cloud of dust. For the those from this world, this must be a rather dreadful display.

As for me, I had the sudden urge to tell them this.

"Now, run."

But, the enemy soldiers did not run away despite noticing us. Upon looking at them closely, they don't have even a single wagon with them.

"I see. It seems like they've become weak because there's not enough food." I muttered to myself.

With no food, they won't have the energy to escape. They've probably

reached their limits already.

Well, I destroyed those villages with this intention though.

As we approached the enemy, we saw that all of them were barely standing. I found the term half-dead to be suitable in this situation.

If it's like this, there's no need to urge them to run anymore. I stopped the car a certain distance from the enemy, and used the [Loudspeaker] to address them.

"Drop your weapons!"

The enemy soldiers showed agitation at the alarming volume of my voice. Probably because of that surprise, they did not disarm right away. Because there was no other choice, I decided to say it once again.

"Drop your weapons or I will kill all of you!"

This time, all of them had a startled expression. When some of them threw their weapons onto the ground, the rest follow suit and disarmed too.

"Why did you attack our town?!" I continued speaking.

This was something I had to ask.

The reason would most likely be that they wanted to make [Spices] theirs while intending to enslave the beastmen and me.

We had decided to embarrass the enemy — the point was to harass them using the position of the winner, for my entertainment.

In fact, there were no replies from the people in front of us.

That's right. Maybe, there was some some kind of justified cause from their side. But, that's something that only applied to their side. If they looked it at from our viewpoint, they did invade us no matter what their reasons were. Now that their lives were in my hands, they might be killed if they explained it poorly,.

"We have not done any damage to your country! Rather, you should have profited! Even so, because of your own greed, you attacked our town to make it your own! Know that your arrogance was the reason for your ruin!" I declared.

Hmm, this should be a sound argument. This sound a little like preaching, but I feel comfortable about it to be honest.

I mean, this is the second time they came to attack. So, they should really cut it out.

Then, one person stood up amongst the enemy soldiers and came forward.

It was a woman.

I have heard from the captured soldiers that the head of the Red Dragon Order was the daughter of the king. Her name should be Mireille San Sandora, right?

“I am the daughter of King Sandra, Mireille San Sandora. The sin of the kingdom is also my sin. That is why, kill me. In exchange, I hope you can spare the others.” Mireille knelt down and requested.

There was no light in her eyes, and her voice was extremely weak. Rather than sacrificing herself for them, it seemed more like she desired death.

“The militiamen do not have any sin. Those sins should be shouldered by your country. Therefore I will help the militiamen. I will also give them food as well.” I ignored Mireille’s request and said. “But, the knights are different. You belong to your country and make a living by fighting. The sin of the kingdom is thus, also the sin of the knights. Therefore I can’t forgive the knights.”

Even if the militiamen were captured, they weren’t worth even a silver coin, so it would be better to let them go. After they return to their homelands, they will serve as advertisement for my benevolence.

But, I will not forgive the knights. Even so, I will not kill them. After capturing them, I will demand a large amount of compensation for them. That’s all I’m going to do.

But, perhaps because the knights thought they would be killed, they started complaining, as if their lack of spirit till now was a lie.

Besides getting saved, the militiamen also obtained food. That “life-saving chance” was given out right in front of them while they were sentenced to what might be death. Therefore, the knights became desperate.

“Mireille san Sandora. You decide whether to obey or not. Let me tell you, I will not change my mind about everything I’ve said here.” I stated amidst their protests.

If they do not obey, then there was no other way but to fight. No, I don’t think that’s even necessary. Let’s just turn back at once and come again after they’ve starved and become completely immobilized. By that time, there will be internal discord between the militiamen and the knights, and only a miserable end would await them.

I gazed at Mireille’s face and patiently waited for her reply.

“...We will obey.” She replied quietly.

I think that that’s a wise answer. But, the knights didn’t agree, and Mireille became the target of criticism.

“You should go and die!”

“You are the one who should take responsibility and die!”

“Don’t involve us in this!”

In the end, a man appeared and tried to appeal to me by saying that Mireille was the one who started this war.

That might be true, but there is no way for me to judge now. So, I blasted the car’s horn. The noisy sound echoed in the vicinity, and as a result, everyone was so surprised that they just about collapsed on the spot.

Thus, I knew that they had a considerable fear of this sound.

“Let me tell you this - those who disobey will be killed without mercy! That is final!” I stated sternly.

In other words, those who don’t not disobey will not be killed. In this situation where the other side was driven into desperation, they would not be able to process my words calmly.

After hearing my words, the militiamen spoke among themselves and began to distance themselves from the knights. It was an action to avoid trouble reaching them.

Well, the fact that they tried to separate themselves from the knights could be easily understood.

Then, several knights tried to mix in with them. But, even if they don't wear armor, it was clear from their clothes. The quality of the clothes of the militiamen and the knights, whether dirtied by blood or mud, was obviously different.

When a knight was kicked out by the militiamen and rolled forward, they started getting kicked by groups.

The knights were being trampled by the militiamen. It was like a small-scaled revolution (gekokujou).

[TL: Gekokujou is the act of junior dominating seniors or retainer supplanting their lords, Japanese has strict society class after all so this act is usually rare to happens.]

There was one militiaman with red hair stepping on the knights with a demon-like appearance.

I wonder if he has any strong resentment towards the knights?

But, since this mess would remain as it was if I don't do anything, I thought that I should proceed with the talk.

"Don't worry. The knights will just be hostages. I will not take their lives. If your country pays the compensation, we will release you."

The knights were relieved when they heard my words.

"Beastmen get off. I will hand you the rope. Tie the necks and arms of all the knights together. Don't be careless." I ordered.

The beastmen alight from the truck. Surrounded by strong beastmen with weapons, the weakened knights became frightened.

Several beastmen were putting the ropes over the necks and arms of the knights, and thus, all of them were tied up before long.

During this series of actions, the beastmen had a proud expression on their faces.

As for the militiamen, we wrapped [Miso], [Rice Crackers], and [Dried Fish] in a cloth and handed it over to them. Although they might suspect that our preparation was too smooth, it's too late to care about that at this point.

After they received the food and ate some of it, the militiamen thanked me and left.

We also distributed [Miso] and [Rice Crackers] to the knights, and allowed them eat on the spot.

While they ate that, we ate the [Deep-fried lunch box] with great relish.

[Deep-fried lunch box] 50,000 yen (list price 500 yen) x 63 = 3.15 million yen (list price 31,500 yen)

After the meal, the beastmen and I slowly returned back to the town while making the knights walk the long 80 km road to their new prison.

Thus, the battle against the Kingdom of Sandra finally ended.

Chapter 042 - After the War ①

About 200 defeated knights walked the long journey in two lines back to town. The rope was hung on each of their necks while their arms were tied up at the wrist. They looked just like criminals.

If there was one exception, it'd be Mireille. She was walking at the end of the line, and the rope on her neck was not connected to the other knights'. The end of the rope was in Mira's hands.

Of course, there was a reason for this.

When Mireille was linked to the other knights and needed to relieve herself, Nobuhide panicked and changed the setup of the prisoners. Ever since that, she has been treated like this.

Well, in the first place, the knights of the Kingdom of Sandra were already in a hopeless situation.

It was very painful to march under the harsh sunlight whilst tied up in rough ropes, but after some food entered their stomachs, their power recovered. Also, with their lives guaranteed, life slowly came back to their eyes.

Soon after they got assured of their safety, it changed into their current dissatisfaction.

The knights felt humiliated. They were treated much lower than peasants. Furthermore, those who bound them and forced them to walk were beastmen. At the very least, they would be fine if their captors were humans or demi-humans, but it was "those" beastmen.

As a result, irritation started to sprout inside the knights' hearts, and it appeared in their attitudes.

For example, they will not stand up after the break is over. For example, their complaints increased. For example, they start cursing at the beastmen when when they're out of earshot, etc *etc.*

Because they feared the beastmen who were holding weapons, so it's alright

if it's only this much. Thus, the other knights also did not cross the line.

Of course, not everyone was like that. While some were ashamed by their own immaturity, some were trying to accept their current situation However, they numbered less than a handful. Most of them indulged themselves in their own self-consolation.

And then, one member of the Cat Tribe finally heard one of knight's bad mouthing. The catman hit the knight's head strongly with the short spear in rage.

When the knight cried out and fell down, the other knights were also pulled by the rope, and fell to the side like dominoes.

"What's wrong?" Nobuhide stopped the car and asked.

The eyes of other beastmen also fell onto that catman. Nobuhide's eyes, that were covered by orange goggles, were directed at him.

"H-He was saying bad things about us, about the beastmen's social standing..." The catman defended himself in soft mumbles.

Nobuhide is a human. While he wasn't lenient when he fought against humans, but after the battle, the beastmen knew that he was somewhat concerned about the humans. Many beastmen thought that that was because Nobuhide was a human.

Nobuhide's gaze turned towards the knight who was pointed out by the catman. The knight in question seemed to have lost consciousness.

"You... By any chance... Fujiwara... san is a human, right?" A knight different from the one who fainted asked.

There were only a few knights who knew of Nobuhide's appearance without his helmet, orange goggle and face mask on. But, everyone knew that the leader of the beastmen was a human.

Looking at the response of the beastmen toward Nobuhide.. Even though Nobuhide commanded the beastman till now, the catman showed a slight fear this time.

Upon seeing that it was not the same fear towards the people from the same

tribe, the knight concluded the identity of Nobuhide.

“That’s right.” Nobuhide answered to the question simply.

When the knight heard that, his speech became smooth at once.

“Why did you do such thing even though you are a human?! We are from the same race! Are not you the same humans as we are?!”

A human is only a human, and a beastman is only a beastman. Humans should only live for humans, so why was this human supporting other races?

That was the knight’s argument. Other knights also started agreeing loudly.

When one of them started to raise their voice, another also started to voice out saying, “That is right!”

A droplet of water quickly became heavy rain. With so much people roaring the same thing, it sounded just like pouring rain.

“If you are a human, free us!” One of them yelled.

[TL: this guy never learn, human kills another human to live, to expand, to conquer, there is nothing wrong with siding with other side even if it is not human being.]

Nobuhide listened to the knights’ words silently, which further spurred the knights’ momentum.

(Was this what they called mob psychology?)

Their words quickly turned more violent as they tried to convince Nobuhide.

“Traitor!”

“Traitor of humans!”

“Have you forgotten the teachings of god?! This is heresy!”

[TL: I feel like this is what happens in my country right now, In different context, same form.]

[ED: Just the bit about heresy makes me want to burn these knights alive after dousing them in gasoline :)]

The number one religion of this continent was the teachings of Rashia which

said that humans were indispensable elements of this continent.

Hence, being called a heretic was regarded as one of the greatest disgrace for a human.

Of course, different continents had different teachings, so Rashia was not the only religion.

“This heretic!”

Eventually, the curses from the knights unified and changed into the word “heretic”.

Inside the knights’ minds, words like ‘is it already good?’ ‘did you repent a little bit?’ surfaced with glee.

“Are you done with your cursing?” Nobuhide finally spoke.

The knights were surprised that Nobuhide didn’t seem affected by their words at all.

“Then, on the next break, you won’t get any meals. As for the beastmen... If the prisoners don’t obey, don’t hesitate to hit them.” Nobuhide continued speaking calmly.

And thus, the knights’ complaints were forcibly shut down by further blows from the beastmen.

Four days later...

The party finally arrived at the town. The reason why the march took so long despite consisting of only a small number of people was probably because the movements of the knights were hindered by ropes.

The color of the ground around the town looked different after the mountain of corpses were removed. According to Nobuhide’s instructions, all the people from town buried the corpses inside holes. Of course, it was because he was afraid of plague.

The knights breathed in relief after they finally reached the town. Many of the knights knew about the treatment received by their former colleague Romatto. Therefore, even with the humiliating position of a prisoner of war, there was a little sense of security and happiness.

But, that kind of thinking was naive.

After taking a break outside the town, Mireille and the knights departed once again. They passed through the brick house beside the town that was used as a temporary shelter for those who were wounded, and walked further south.

“O-Oi! Are we not there yet?!” The knight who raised the question was silenced by a strike from the spear shortly thereafter.

The march began once more. Because the destination of the march was unknown this time, the knights’ minds and bodies started to decline again.

Two days passed, and the party finally reached their destination which was 40 km further south from the town.

There were a stone wall about 10 meters high enclosing 100 meter square of land.

Even the beastmen did not know that there was such a thing in this place. Of course, that was because it was something Nobuhide [Purchased] in a hurry.

During this march, Nobuhide had sped up his vehicle and went to the south alone many times. One of the reasons why was to [Purchase] these stone walls.

“Is this our final destination..?” The leading knight muttered.

One could see that the bolts surrounding castle gate of the stone walls were on the outside. There was no one who did not know what that meant.

The knights quickly realized that this was the prison that will keep them confined.

There was only a dilapidated house inside. Afterwards, the knights will live there under the beastmen’s supervision.

◆

“What did you say?! Say that again!” In the royal palace situated in the imperial city of Sandoria, the angry voice of the king echoed.

The one receiving the anger was the knight kneeling in front of the throne. Before Nobuhide’s night attack, Mireille had sent a messenger to her country. Bringing 4 horses in tow, he advanced the distance of 80 km a day while

changing horses, and finally arrived at Sandoria today.

“T-Then I will say it again!” The knight gulped in fear. “The army that went to attack to the south was annihilated by strange attacks from the enemy! The leader of the Yellow Dragon Knight Order, Barbarodem, and the vice leader of the Red Dragon Knight Order were killed! The number of allies were reduced to around one thousand and a few hundred, and will retreat back to our country as soon as possible!”

Upon hearing the report from the messenger once again, the king trembled as he collapsed bonelessly onto the throne. Wrinkles formed between his eyebrows.

“T-The number of remaining enemy soldiers... How many have you killed?” His mouth that was trembling with anger was finally able to squeeze his words out.

“Ze... Zero..!” The messenger did not dare to look up at his ruler.

At that moment, the sound of the crown hitting the ground next to the messenger echoed.

The king let anger swallow him, his eyes burning bright as he stood up.

“Do... Don’t joke around!! 5000 soldiers couldn’t even kill a single one, and was completely annihilated?! Even with two of our strongest knight orders gathered, they couldn’t even kill a single one?! Kill him! Behead this messenger! He’s spouting lies!” The king thundered.

A scream leaked out from the messenger’s mouth as he trembled like a frail leaf in the wind.

But, there was someone who tried to dissuade the king. It was the Chief Adviser, usually standing next to the king, who did so.

“Your Majesty, there is no reason for this person to lie. We should dispatch soldiers to the south immediately to investigate.” He stated calmly.

The king glared at the Chief Adviser. The king also knew that the messenger was not lying. But, even if he was aware of it, he couldn’t admit it. Thus, the king’s anger turned to his chief adviser.

“In the first place, it was because you bastard said to attack the south..!” He pointed at his adviser fiercely.

In the first place, the king was against of the conquest of the south.

Unknown magic...

He had anxiety which he could not get rid of regarding this. However, he was pressed by the surrounding opinion, and finally passed the Royal Decree to do so, especially because of the well-reasoned report from the Chief Advisor which broke his indecisiveness.

“That’s right. But, was His Majesty not the one who approved of it?” The elderly man replied sternly.

Blaming the failure on the king was usually something impossible for a vassal. But, the aged Chief Advisor had served since the generation of current king’s grandfather, and had been a loyal retainer till now. He also served as the official in charge of the king’s education since he was a child, so this remark seemed more like a teacher admonishing his student than anything.

Then, the king hit the armrest of his throne and clenched his right hand into a tight fist. The messenger trembled, but as expected, the Chief Advisor did not even twitch.

The king heaved a loud sigh. The throbbing pain of his right hand calmed his anger.

“..... Alright, I understand. About what to do from now on, we will think about it from scratch.” After saying that, the King listened to the messenger’s report about the war in detail, especially about the unknown attack that was carried out by the opponent.

After listening to all this, the King let the soldier withdraw and began talking calmly.

“First, about the annihilation of the knight orders... This is bad. Even though there’s no outside disturbance, there might be a revolt.”

The Kingdom of Sandra was established with the feudal system. Each lord was able to govern their own territory to certain a degree. In other words, it was not

exaggerated to say that the kingdom was just an alliance of small countries. Therefore, to show authority over the other lords, he held control of the Knight Order of the Four Dragons and 2,000 reserve soldiers in the Imperial City of Sandoria.

But, amongst the four knight orders, two were already on the brink of collapse. This meant that his “influence” on other lords would be weakened.

“Gather the farmer soldiers in the territory under our direct control and train them. With this, those lords with bad thoughts should rethink their plans.” The Senior Advisor suggested.

There were numerous areas under the king’s direct control. To enrich the King’s territory, there was no draft even during wartime, so the number of people increased during this peaceful time.

By recruiting the farmer soldiers and training them, it would show off the king’s military power. Although it would cost a lot of money, it was the best possible idea to deter those lords with numbers.

“However...” The king was once again indecisive about the idea.

Even though the territory under his direct control had not been attacked by enemies, to recruit people... Even if it was for the drill, it would be clear that there would be war in the future.

Because these people had been pampered since their location was far from the war zone, they would be dissatisfied, which could lead to rebellion.

“If it was known that half of the Four Dragon Knight Orders had been destroyed, I don’t know how other countries would react. If one of the countries decides to invade our country, the enemy will first try to entice each lord away. So, I think that it is necessary to start the drill early.” The old man further explained.

“Uurghh... Alright. There is no choice in this case. The people will need to endure it. Then, what of the south?” The king gritted his teeth and asked.

“We should send soldiers to investigate as soon as possible. At the same time, let’s send people to conclude a cease-fire agreement and ensure stability in the south.” The advisor stated.

“Will they respond?” The king felt hesitant.

“Since the number of beastmen currently living there is small, I do not think that Fujiwara has any ambition to move towards the north. So, I think that it is possible.” The older man postulated.

“Who should we send? Braunitze is absent now.” The king frowned.

“We don’t have time to wait because we need to prepare before other countries know about our defeat. Let’s appoint the merchant who’s acquainted with them as the special envoy and send them. We do not need other people.” The Chief Advisor suggested.

“A merchant as the envoy, you say? They do not have much loyalty towards the country. Is it going to be alright?” The king worried.

“You don’t need to worry. The merchant opened her store in our country after all. The occupation of a merchant is not easy, so they will understand our meaning.” The aged man nodded firmly.

“But, will Fujiwara agree to it?” The king continued to fret.

“I think that Fujiwara is slightly different from normal people.” The advisor began.

“I know. Otherwise, he would not have led the beastmen to fight against humans.” The king cut in impatiently.

“For Fujiwara, whether they are beastmen or not is not important. Perhaps, he looks at this world with his personal eyes. Who is evil or good?

He seems to choose to associate with people using that standard.” The advisor continued, as if he had not been interrupted at all.

“...Hmm. Alright, I understand. This is urgent. So let’s begin immediately.” The king wave his hand and quickly gave the order.

But, there was one thing he had not touched upon yet, so the Chief Advisor decided to ask.

“...What should we do about Mireille-sama?”

“It is the path that she chose herself.” The king replied quietly.

“Is that so.” After giving a bow, the Chief Advisor left the throne room.

“Fuu...” There was no one speaking at the throne room as the king let out a small breath. Although there were imperial guards, the king didn’t mind their presence. “Mireille... I hope that you are safe.”

This was his feelings as a father. But, after all, this was only his feelings as a father. Even if his daughter was killed, he needed to refrain from acting rashly, and act as a king would.

Chapter 043 - After the War ②

On that day, I woke up due to noisy sounds from the air-conditioner.

“Kuhhh...” I groaned as I got up from the bed, stretched, and yawned.

Looking at the clock, it was already past 2 PM. In other words, I slept in way too much, but considering how busy I was until yesterday, this was something inevitable.

Ever since the kingdom’s army came to this place, I had not been able to sleep well for a week.

But, it ended yesterday.

The captive knights were sent to the prison in the south. In addition, one of the knights was sent back to the Kingdom of Sandra to convey the current situation.

Now I only have to wait for their response.

How will the kingdom respond? Will they send their army again? Will they send a messenger hoping for a ceasefire and demand the captives back? I can’t be careless.

Nonetheless, it can’t be helped, so I’m on guard at all times. But, I will do my job when it comes to it, so it is important to take rest on a rest day as well.

For time being, the town has shifted back to its normal daily life, so I thought that I would also return to a relaxed life for the time being.

Even so, I am really concerned about the sound that had been coming from the air-conditioner since a while ago.

Was it because I bought a cheap one? Or maybe, it might be wearing out? No, it could also be because I never gave performed maintenance on it for 5 years...

The refrigerator had also broken down once, so the refrigerator I am using now is the second one. The first unit’s temperature control became ineffective during the third year, and had thus, already been [sold].

[Refrigerator] [Sale Value] 5 Yen

[TL: dirt cheap, this is dirt cheap second-hand Japan product!]

Because I purchased it using the ability, it's [Sale Value] was one-tenth of the [Purchase Price]. Furthermore, because it had broken down, it was only worth 5 yen.

Although cheap electronic appliances were okay, it would be scary if it came to something like the truck or armored car. I need to keep maintaining them, at least until we manage to change the [Era Setting] to [Modern]. I want to use them without them breaking down.

After finishing various thing and having a meal, I picked up the phone.

“Yes, this is Jiharu.” The calm voice of Chief Jiharu could be heard from the receiver.

I remembered that when Jiharu first used the telephone, his voice was tense because of nervousness so that it felt kind of strange.

How many years ago had that been? Time sure flew by fast.

“This is Fujiwara. I wanted a general report, so I contacted you. How is the condition of the southern prison?”

“From the morning report, there does not seem to be any abnormalities.” The Wolfman stated.

In the southern prison where the knights were being confined, the people from the Wolf Tribe were currently dispatched there as Watchmen. There were towers atop the stone walls which they used to monitor the prisoners.

The plan was to replace them with other tribes every week, and liquor would be delivered to the people who were on duty at a later date.

“How was the horse used for transportation?” I continued my questioning.

“I heard that it was very quiet and obedient” Jiharu replied steadily.

The horses that bucked off the knights and ran away due to the shock from the cannon fire had come to the town fields for food.

The beast-men caught them when I went out for the night raids. Amongst

them, there was a strong, calm and large horse that was perfect for pulling carts, so it was useful as a battle-ready force and for transporting food to prison.

On the contrary, there was currently no demand for horses that specialized in running. So at this point, there was no other choice but to turn them into meat.

“Who is watching the princess of the Kingdom of Sandra?” I asked.

Mireille, the head of the Red Dragon Knight Order, and the daughter of the king of Sandra, lived in the Inn. She was going to be an important source of income, so if something happened to her, I would be troubled. Thus, I only asked those who were the most trustworthy in the wolf tribe to watch her.

“I only placed those who are sure of their strength to watch her. Just as you’ve previously instructed, only people of the same sex were arranged to watch her. Mira has been watching her since this morning.” Jiharu explained.

“Mira? She had been participating in the night raids until yesterday, no? Should we not give her a day off?” I frowned.

“She asked to do it no matter what.” Jiharu sighed.

I felt restless. At any rate, I feel too restless. When I thought so silently, Jiharu said the following words, as if he could read my mind.

“I understand that Fujiwara-sama is concerned. But, don’t worry. Mira is already 18 years old. I promise that she will never act rashly like she did in the past. In addition, Mira’s martial art skills are not inferior to that of the men’s. So, she is suitable for this.”

If he went as far to say something like this, I had no choice but to agree with it.

Finally, I told him to pay attention to the physical condition of the townspeople since it was a hot day and hung up.

After that, I went outside the house.

“Catherine, good morning.” I greeted Catherine, who was lying down peacefully.

She lifted her neck my way and blinked. It was her own way to return the

greeting. And then, she placed her head back down to the ground and closed her eyes.

Fu fu... How cute.

After being healed by Catherine, I opened the south gate opposite of the town.

It used to be a place to store crops, but now, it was loaded with weapons and armor that were loot from this war.

I am about [Sell] them now.

“Now then, this should be enough for the prisoners 'living cost.' I said to myself as I summoned [Town Data] and executed the [Sale] command for the weapons and armor.

The names of the weapons and armors were listed on the screen in front of me with their sale prices displayed next to them.

[Steel Longsword] [Sale price 300,000 yen]

[Steel Longsword] [Sale price 280,000 yen]

[Iron Shortsword] [Sale price 30,000 yen]

[Steel Plate Armor] [Damaged] [Sale price 100,000 yen]

[Steel open helmet] [Sale Price 100,000 yen]

[Iron Kettle Hat] [Sale price 50,000 yen]

[Leather Armor] [Sale price 20,000 yen]

[Steel Plate Armor] [Sale Price 700,000 yen]

.

.

.

As I thought, the weapons of this world were surprisingly cheap. For example...

[Steel Longsword] [Sale price 300,000 yen]

It’s about this alloy named steel. It was what the knights from the Red Dragon Knight Order had. I had thought that this sword was too long to be used on horseback. And then, the important thing was the price. The [sale price] for this sword was only 300,000.

If I purchased a [Katana] with this ability, even the cheapest one exceeded 1 million yen.

Thinking about it like this, it could be said that this [Longsword] was dirt cheap. Also, because it was a sword used by the knight order, the quality should not be that bad. Perhaps the price became like this because of the difference in iron quantity and how it was processed, by magic and *etc.* for example.

Anyway, I need to sell them from now on, so it’s nothing to be happy about.

I looked at the selling list while scrolling down the screen. Then, I noticed something interesting.

[Meteorite Halberd] [Sale Price] 23 million yen.

I found a clear difference in the price.

Meteorite... I wonder if this was about meteorite iron? I had heard about weapons made from meteorite even in the previous world.

But, even if it was made from a meteorite, the strength should not differ that much from the weapons processed by other kinds of iron. Does this mean that the high price was due to the rarity? No, this was the world of magic after all, so it might be something more special.

Let’s take it out from the sale list for the time being.

I slid my eyes further down the screen.

“Hmm?” I noticed something interesting again.

[Considerably Good Sword] [Seriously Damaged] [★] [Sale Price 7,000,000 yen]

Something awfully familiar was being reflected on the screen. A star mark that was not attached to any other weapons or armors. There was no doubt that this [Considerably Good Sword] was from one of the God’s cards.

Then, why was it here? Sano said that his card was the [Considerably Good Shield]. In other words, there was another one from the same country in the enemy's ranks?

No, Sano said that he came together with someone else. I had never heard about that person's card, and there was also the possibility that Sano was the one who had this card instead.

"...He said that that person was sick." I remembered Sano's words.

Sano said that the one who came to this world together was already sick to the point of lying down on the floor. If that was true, that person was depending on Sano's life to live. That person from the same country may not be able to live on now.

"I should ask the other knights about Sano later." I decided.

Sano was probably dead. He was not among the captured knights. Although there was a chance that he might be amongst the injured people who were receiving treatment, he probably would have mentioned my name by now.

There was also a possibility that he returned back to the Kingdom of Sandra alone. But, that possibility was too small, especially with the food problem. Anyway, those who couldn't afford to escape by themselves won't have the time to even think about food supply issues.

Well, it was not bothersome to support Sano in the Kingdom of Sandra since he was someone from the same country. While thinking such a thing, I removed [Considerably Good Sword] from the sale list, and moved my gaze further down the screen.

Then, I sold everything.

In the end, there were some items which exceeded 10 million yen, and there were also some arms that had damage so severe that they could not be sold. As a result, it could be said that I didn't get as much money as I thought I would.

Well, it was sufficient for the prisoners' meal fees though.

Incidentally, I heard about the story from someone who was familiar with Sano later on. There was no one depending on Sano for support. He had also

said he does not even use a shield.

Apparently, Sano lied to me. That means that the [Considerably Good Sword] was probably Sano's own card. He either tried to deceive me to get information, or he was trying to kill me with that [Considerably Good Sword].

As a result, the slight sense of guilt and sympathy for Sano disappeared completely, and I felt completely refreshed.

Chapter 044 - Mira and Mireille ①

The afternoon of a certain day...

Mira visited Mireille’s room with lunch on a tray. When she opened the sliding door, Mireille was sitting with her eyes closed on the tatami.

(Again, huh?)

Mira thought.

Mireille had been confined in one of the inn’s rooms. With nothing to do, she was just sitting there.

Whether it was morning, noon, or night, she did not change what she did. Speaking of moving, she only did so when she ate, went to the bathroom, or took a bath.

From the start, she didn’t seem to be alive. She was just like a soulless doll.

“It’s meal time.” Mira announced.

“Thanks.” Mireille opened her eyes and expressed her gratitude.

Only the minimum amount of words were exchanged, as per usual.

Mira put the tray on the desk, and Mireille picked up the unfamiliar chopsticks. Her fingers were so thin that she couldn’t even figure out which one was the chopstick.

No, it wasn’t just her fingers. Her flesh thinned, the bones surfaced, and her eyes were hollow. Mireille looked like a ghost.

“...Are you eating properly?” Upon seeing Mireille’s state, Mira finally said something besides the bare minimum.

“Are you concerned?” Mireille asked after putting down the miso soup that she had sipped. She had a faint smile on her pale face.

Mira was startled by that smile.

Could it be called a fleeting beauty? It looked so fragile that it might break the moment you touched it. That attractive smile produced an indescribable charm.

“.....”

“.....”

They stared at each other and remained silent.

After a while, someone finally opened their mouth. It was Mireille.

“Yeah, I ate properly. You should know that as well.”

Mira was occasionally replaced by others, but basically, it was usually Mira who was taking care of Mireille. Therefore, whether Mireille is eating or not, Mira herself knew it well.

“Then, what is it with your current state now?” Mira demanded.

Even though she took her meals properly, Mireille got thinner day by day. That was abnormal.

“Who knows.” The princess shrugged casually.

However, Mira seemed to know the cause of Mireille’s anomaly.

“If you die, Fujiwara-sama will be troubled. Do something about it.” Mira ordered.

“Fuu... Even if you say so, there is nothing I can do about this.” Mireille sighed.

It would be useless to say anything more than this. Mira did not say anything else and just left the room.

Today was the same too.

She ate her meal, took care of her business, cleaned up, and mediated. Mira thought that Mireille would do the same routine she usually did today as well.

◆

Mireille was thinking about the beastwoman while sitting quietly.

Her name was Mira. She did not introduce herself to her, but she knew of her name when she heard someone call her.

She remembered Mira’s conduct. Every single one of her body movements

was for a reason. There was no wastage in her movements. She might have had considerable training for her to be so familiar with the way she moved.

Thinking that far, she sneered at herself. Things like fighting don't matter anymore. She knew that there was no point in having strength.

No matter how hard she trained, Mireille understood that there was no hope in this fight.

Death will come equally for the weak and the strong.

If she closed her eyes, the deaths of many people would float around the back of her eyelids. However, Mireille kept looking at it.

Eventually, night fell.

Mireille heard the sound of sliding doors opening.

"It's meal time." It was Mira's voice again.

Opening her eyes, she looked at Mira, who was putting the tray down onto the desk.

“There are a lot of things tonight.” Mireille commented.

Rice, fish, and horsemeat. As for the drinks, it was camel milk. There were also a lot of fruits. This was not a meal served to prisoners at all.

“...When I reported about you, I was told to give you something that could increase your strength.” Mira mumbled.

“Is that so? I only got a little bit thinner. If such delicious food were to be served, I think I would be bedded by that guy soon.” The princess stated blandly.

“Oi!” Mira growled.

“It’s just a joke.” When she laughed, Mira stood up angrily and left the room.

Before long, she finally finished her meal. After a while, Mira came by to pick

up the empty tableware. Mira did not say anything, and when she was leaving with the tableware, Mireille opened her mouth to speak.

“Wait.”

She could not understand why Mireille had stopped herself from leaving. But, she couldn’t help but stop when she was called.

Mirelle’s mouth opened again.

“What is your name?”

“...It’s Mira.” The beastwoman said.

She knew her name. However, she thought that she wanted to hear it from her own mouth.

“My name is Mireille. I think they sound quite similar.” Mireille smiled slightly.

Their names were a little bit similar. No, it was not just the name. Mireille thought that while she was also a woman, she also went down the path of a warrior, just like her.

Even though the other woman was a beastwoman, her appearance looked just like that of a human. Apparently, Mira was special.

“What’s wrong?” Mireille only asked this since Mira frowned when she said that their names were similar.

“My name is something precious given to me by my mother. Don’t mix it with a human’s name.” Mira gritted her teeth.

“Do you hate humans?” Mireille couldn’t help but ask.

“I hate them. I hate them so much that I want to tear them apart.” Mira ground out her words.

“Isn’t the leader of this town a human as well? Do you hate Fujiwara too?” The princess continued her questions.

“.....” Mira became silent for a while, and left the room.

Mireille stared at the sliding door where Mira had left from for a while. Eventually, she closed her eyes and started to meditate once more.

The next day, as well as the following day, Mireille talked to Mira. She didn’t

know why she was so interested in Mira. But strangely, since she had started talking to Mira, Mireille's body stopped becoming weaker.

"I lost everything." Mireille mumbled.

"Are you in the position to say that after taking everything from us beastmen?" Mira sneered.

"You had something taken from you too?" The princess asked.

"Yes. You guys were the ones who robbed me of my land and my mother." The beastwoman stated.

"Is that so? So this time, it's our turn, huh?" Mireille said to herself.

Mira did not answer. She want to say that she deserved it, but she did not do so. Then, Mira left with the tableware as per usual.

When Mira left, Mireille did not do anything anymore. She simply closed her eyes again, and just thought about another person's death.

Chapter 045 - Peace ①

It was the peak of summer.

I learned about the news of visitors when I was washing the cars in my home's garden.

I changed into the familiar battle clothes immediately before getting on Catherine and heading to the north gate where I climbed up the castle walls.

"Fujiwara-san! It's me! Me!" Before my eyes was a red-haired woman shouting in front of the castle gate.

What is this? Is this the "it's me, it's me" fraud? ...I kept that joke to myself.

Ahem, let me introduce her again. She's Elsa, the chairman of the Polo Commerce firm, who had come to visit the town again. This time, she was accompanied by four people dressed like knights. They were faces whom I had never seen before.

There was only one carriage, so they did not seem to have come to do business.

“Elsa-san, what is your business?” I raised my voice and asked.

“Today, I have not come for business! I was sent as a special envoy!” She shouted back.

Well, I thought that it might have been such a thing. To send someone close to me, it was likely that they sought peace.

It seems like the Kingdom of Sandra was being driven to a corner... Well, it was a given since I already destroyed two out of the four knight orders they had.

“What about the other four?!” I yelled.

“They are the escorts sent by the kingdom! They are not members of the firm!” She replied honestly.

Can I trust Elsa on this? Well, since there were no reactions from the four knights, the answer might already been given.

Well, I understand that they did not need to trick me with the knights now. If they had such intentions, they could simply falsify their identities and enter the town as merchants while feigning ignorance.

“I will only permit entry for Elsa-san! Is that okay!?” I asked.

“No problem! That was originally my intention!” Elsa gave a bright grin and a thumbs up.

Thus, Elsa entered the town while leaving the four knights behind. We then exchanged greetings after a long while.

I think this was the first time I’ve seen Elsa since a year ago? I didn’t meet her again after the trade with the kingdom started.

“Gee, I am honestly troubled. I am just a merchant just like the others.” She sighed.

[TL: I hate osaka-ben][TLC:Why? I love it xD. They are really unique]

When we started talking about nostalgic stuff, Elsa began complaining about the kingdom. It continued even after we moved to a room at a vacant store.

“Why do I need to do this? This is a job for government officials. If you don’t work, just return the tax money! Or rather, that rotten i*potent old man... Just

drop dead already!” She grumbled.

[TLC: the raws censored impotent lol,腐れイ○ポジジイ]

The contents become quite extreme as she continued. Her complaints about the Chief advisor of the kingdom was especially terrible. There were also vulgar words that a woman of marriageable age should not be saying. It was to the extent that I, who heard it, became embarrassed.

“Hahaha... We should start hearing your story soon.” I quickly changed the topic.

“Ah, that’s right, we should finish it quickly. I was asked by the Kingdom of Sandea to mediate peace with this town.” She quickly restated her purpose.

“Peace, huh?” I smiled wryly.

“Yeah. Have you heard? Fujiwara-san, you’ve beaten up the army so bad that out of four Dragon Knight Orders of the kingdom, Red and Yellow have already been destroyed. This is bad since other countries won’t miss this moment of weakness of the kingdom.” Elsa explained.

“Huh? Didn’t the church ban war between countries?” I asked.

“About that... They’ve already changed it. There will be no problems as long as you have a justifiable reason for the war. In other words, you can wage wars

as you like as long as you have reason.” She shrugged her shoulders.

So it’s become such a thing... You could easily create a reason for war… Many years ago, Frost’s words about the peace ending soon were correct, huh?

“The Kingdom of Sandra is afraid that Fujiwara-san would hit at the south now. If that’s the case, surely the other countries in the north will simultaneously attack, and it will be over. Presently, the Kingdom of Sandra can’t afford to split their army to the north and south.” Elsa continued to speak.

“Is it okay to inform me of such a thing?” I smiled.

“Rather, I have to speak about it. Listen, okay? For example, if the Kingdom of Sandra fell under the control of another country, what do you think will happen then?” She started laying out the situation.

“What would happen..? Aah, it would be like that, huh?” I mumbled.

Even if another country took control, it would eventually be the same - this town will be targeted.

If the Kingdom of Sandra was absorbed by a more powerful country, they may invade this town. If that’s so, it would be much better to let them remain alive than kill them since it would be much better to use the kingdom as a shield.

“Hey? It’s better to reconcile right? The reason they sent me here is so that

Fujiwara-san can calm down and think about the situation carefully. Even if Fujiwara-san attacks the kingdom out of anger, there will be no profit for both sides.” Elsa elaborated.

“I see... I understand. Incidentally, other than us, is there any possibility that the countries in the north will attack the kingdom?” I asked.

“There is. Weren’t two of main Order of Knight already done and dusted? The influence of the royal family is in tatters right now. If I was the king of the northern countries, I would attack after bribing some of the feudal lords to change sides with money.” She grinned.

“Hmm...” I hummed as I thought over the situation.

Well, I don’t mind making peace. I don’t plan to move away from this place anyway.

No, in fact, I should make peace with them. If the Kingdom of Sandra waged war with the northern countries, the kingdom might become anxious and would not be able to show sufficient power, and then end up losing.

I prefer for both the northern countries and the kingdom to injure each other.

But if it really became like that, how much was the difference between the fighting forces of both sides?

In reality, even if the Kingdom of Sandra lost half its knight order, they may still be strong. Thus, it was also possible for them to destroy the northern army first, then save their strength to attack this town again.

I can't make a decision here. I have to get more information from the prisoners as well.

"Can you wait a few days for the reply?" I asked.

"It's alright, it's alright. Just think about the conditions of the peace too." Elsa waved me off and winked. "Since I didn't come for business, I will relax this time. Well, can I expect a good meal?"

(She never changes)

I thought while shaking my head.

"What should we do about the knights who came with you?" I decided to ask before making a decision.

"It's okay if you just leave them as it is. There is food in the carriage, so they

won’t starve to death.” She certainly discounted their existence quite easily.

“Th... That is quite heartless, isn’t it..?” I laughed nervously.

“That’s not heartless at all! Try to guess how I’ve felt the whole journey!

Do you know how many conversations I’ve had with them? It’s zero, ZERO!” She ranted. “Even when I tried talking to them, they don’t even reply with a single word! Did their brains get eaten by maggots?!”

“Th... That’s... Awful, huh?” I replied haltingly, not sure what my reply should be.

“Right? Those guys are from the Blue Dragon Knight Order. They are the King’s Imperial Guards, but they look like puppets. They are really troublesome.” She complained even more.

Imperial Guards, huh? Because it concerned a matter important to the nation, I guess I can understand their viewpoint.

Hmm, I wonder if they went through training to eliminate their emotions?

“I understand. Then, we will bring delicious meals and tasty sake in the evening. Please look forward to it.” I smiled at her before getting up and leaving the room.

But, Elsa stretched out her hand and caught my leg with a firm grip.

“Wait a moment. This time, I have a lot of free time! Free time! It’s lonely to always be alone, right? It’s okay to keep me company for a while, right?” Elsa said selfishly like a whining kid.

I don’t feel bad about being held down by a woman, not to mention, Elsa was a beautiful woman. However, there were things that needed to be done here too.

“Then I will let a person from the Wolf Tribe bring you a board game called Reversi. I can’t accompany you, so let those Wolf Tribe —” I spoke placatingly before being cut off halfway by Elsa’s yell.

“That!”

“Eh?” I jerked slightly.

“That reversi! Why didn't you tell me about it sooner?!” She glared at me.

“What is this about?” I questioned.

“Don’t play dumb! Now, in the Kingdom of Sandra, reversi is very popular, and is being supervised by Romatto. I have heard the name Romatto from somewhere, and when I thought about it and looked it up, he was the guy who was held captive here, right?” She pressed.

Romatto. That’s a nostalgic name... Even though it didn’t concern me directly, I heard that he often played reversi with the people from the Wolf Tribe. When he left the town and got some gifts from the Wolf Tribe, I remembered that Romatto was moved to tears.

“Is it popular?” I asked.

“It’s not popular; it’s ridiculously popular! I’ve tried to sell reversi, but without Romatto’s emblem, it was treated like a fake. So, not much got sold.” She complained.

“Romatto’s emblem?” When I asked again, Elsa simply nodded.

“Speaking about Romatto, he is being treated as a master now. His name became famous in the Kingdom of Sandra, and even in other countries, his name is quite famous.” She explained. “Romatto’s signature is a seal of approval from the master. Currently, he only deals with large firms. Even so, everybody wants a reversi board that’s approved by master Romatto. It’s not a crime to sell reversi, but if you forge Romatto’s emblem, it will be a crime since you’ve falsified his name. So, I gave up on selling reversi pretty quickly.”

Master..? That Romatto? If I am not mistaken, he should have been born into an aristocratic family.

Master of Reversi... Where does he intend to go with that title?

Anyway, I am slightly glad knowing that he’s doing well. Later, I will tell this to those wolfmen who were good friends with Romatto.

Chapter 046 - Peace ②

After leaving Elsa, I first went towards the inn where Mireille was confined.

“Hey, thanks for your hard work.” I greeted.

Two wolfmen rose up and returned the greeting as I passed through the inn’s entrance. There was a reversi board between them, and it was clear that they had been playing reversi.

However, they were not skipping their work in particular. There were four guards watching Mireille. Since there were only supposed to be two standing guard, the other two were permitted to take a break during this time.

I told the two of them to be at ease and went to the second floor alone.

“Why, if it isn’t Fujiwara-sama. Thanks for your hard work.”

Mira and a wolfman was standing in front of the room where Mireille was located. Of course, the one who had bowed and greeted me was only the male one. Mira only lowered her head slightly. She wasn’t even trying to look at my eyes.

Her attitude was the same as always, but I has received a report saying that she was doing well in her guard duties, so it's alright.

"I'm coming in." I announced.

Since there was no rejection, I opened the sliding door. In that room, Mireille was sitting in a seiza position with her eyes closed.

I coughed audibly. I had heard the story, but she was indeed losing an abnormal amount of weight.

I've interrogated her when I came to this inn once, but she was like a different person now as compared to then.

"Fujiwara-dono?" Mireille opened her eyes.

There was no color in her eyes. They were hollow.

"You have become thinner. Are the meals not to your tastes?" I asked.

“No, the meals are delicious. They are actually much better for this body.” She replied quietly.

[Did you really become better?]

I was about to blurt out those words unconsciously, but I swallowed them at the very last moment.

“I came to talk. Please tell me about the countries north of the Kingdom of Sandra.” I did not come to have an enjoyable talk, so I quickly went to the main subject.

But, Mireille only agreed softly, and started to talk without asking for the reason.

“There are two countries north of the Kingdom of Sandra. Most of our northern territory are adjacent to the Kingdom of Robutas, and a small part along the northwest coast is adjacent to the Dukedom of Shugurin.” She started her lengthy explanation.

挿絵(By みてみん)

“Although the Kingdom of Robutas has a humid climate overall, there is still a lot grassland spread out in their territory with black soil and little rain, which is suitable for agriculture. In addition, a quarter of the country is forest, and there are a lot of mines too, so their forestry and mining industries are quite developed. But, because they have such blessed lands, the name of their country has changed numerous times because of long wars, and it was only around 40 years ago that it became the current Kingdom of Robutas.” She stated clearly while I simply listened.

“Because they have pushed for excessive centralization until now, their political situation is a little unstable. But, because the king has absolute power, there is no waste in their national affairs. Even though they have just emerged as a country, their national strength can’t be underestimated.” She continued speaking, her voice carrying clearly. “Their relation with the Kingdom of Sandra is not that good. Regarding the northern lands, the Kingdom of Sandra has never recognized it, so territorial disputes exist.

“In contrast, about the Dukedom of Shugurin; it is an average agricultural country without any specialties that are common in this continent. It is an old country, and their political situation is also very stable. They prefer diplomacy, so as a neighboring country, they have good relations with the Kingdom of Sandra.” She introduced the overall situation. “And as for their military strength, the Kingdom of Sandra stands above both countries. But, since half of the Four Dragon Order of Knight were destroyed, as their influence decreases, the relationship of power can be reversed depending on the trend from each lord.”

“I see.” I nodded.

If this story is true, then I should make peace with the Kingdom of Sandra. If I don’t make peace, then the Kingdom of Sandra will need to pay attention to the south, and if they are attacked from the north, then they might have a crisis.

In the first place, I didn’t intend to attack the north from here, so there were no losses for this peace. On the contrary, I can ask for a large sum of money as the condition for peace, so I can return the prisoners without delay.

As I make up my mind, I leave the room with the watchmen. Just before the sliding doors were closed, Mireille’s appearance came into view for a moment.

She had already closed her eyes, and was sitting in silence. Her form was, strangely, fitting for a japanese room.

I told the watchmen to do their best and left the inn.

That night, I drank with Elsa. There was sake, wine, and beer. As for the meal, I had prepared Matsusaka beef served with steak sauce. When Elsa ate the juicy, marbled steak, even her eyes rounded as she exclaimed about how delicious it was.

The common topics between Elsa and me were very limited. Elsa talked about Reila and Ryle who had come here before. Both of them seemed to be doing well. It was said that they would buy a noble rank with money in the future.

I got interested in that story.

“Is there a country where you can buy noble rank?” As I asked, Elsa answered smoothly.

There was a country northwest of the continent -The Kingdom of Dryad. There was no particular industry they specialised in, and they had vast lands, but the number of infertile lands was high. This was especially so in the northern land called Dragon Horn. Food was not growing because of the cold, so they sell such land to people together with the nobility title, and they seemed to have made money with it.

In addition, even in such infertile land, the taxes remain the same with other places, so their land and noble title will be rescinded if they can’t pay the tax.

This seemed almost like fraud.

“Yeah, that’s right. That’s why there are no humans there, right? So, the

beastmen who don’t go south will mostly go there.” Elsa explained.

I just found out something new.

The inflow of beastmen suddenly stopped at a certain moment. I thought it was strange, but it turned out that the place they were aiming for was different.

This might be a chance.

“Is it possible to summon the beastmen here?” I questioned.

“It’s impossible. The Kingdom of Sandra which is in the middle of the route won’t agree. Even if you mention it as the condition for peace, do you think they will agree? Numbers are power. The population of this town will increase, so for the Kingdom of Sandra, it would be more horrible than getting attacked by the northern countries.” Elsa shook her head.

“Is that so..?” I sighed.

The condition to change the [Era Setting] to [Modern] was to get the population to reach 10,000, and have 1 trillion yen funds.

If the funds stay as they were, there should be no problem. But, the population doesn’t increase easily. If I wait for it to increase naturally from reproduction, I will be a grandpa in no time.

Well, as long as I have the money, I can still buy stuff from the [Modern era] even with the [Setting Era] at [Edo], so I haven't thought much about [Population] until now...

"Hmm... Mm.?" I grunted.

While I was absorbed in thinking, Elsa had fallen asleep.

Let's stop here for today.

Still, Elsa was too defenseless in front of a man. When I thought that she was a beautiful woman, Elsa begin to snore loudly. While holding in my laughter, I gently cover Elsa with a coat and left the room.

The morning of second day of Elsa's visit...

I got into the armored car, and headed towards the prison surrounded by stone walls which was about 40 km south from the town.

It's the jail for the knights.

They spend their day in depression without anything to do under the scorching sun.

I went up to the turret on top of the stone walls, and listened to the report

from the Bird tribe who were acting as guards.

Although there seemed to be fights occasionally during breakfast, there were no abnormalities besides that.

I look at the knights' situation from across the vertically barred window.

They lined up side by side in the stone walls' shade, and were simply sitting there without doing anything.

Some people were writing something on the ground. When I looked at it with binoculars, there were Os and Xs drawn in several squares. Two Os were circling the X, and the X became an O. There was no doubt that that was reversi.

As Elsa had said, reversi seemed to have become really popular.

Before long, I had interviewed several of the knights one by one. The contents were about the northern countries.

At first, the knights were suspicious about my line of questioning, but when I mentioned that I would give them meat, everyone's mouths became loose.

The contents were not much different from what Mireille had talked about. Thus, I decided to make peace with the Kingdom of Sandra.

After that, I returned to my house and think about the conditions for peace.

——On the third morning of Elsa’s visit...

I told Elsa that I would make peace and handed the parchment with the conditions written on it.

The Peace Conditions were as followed:

The Kingdom of Sandra will pay 100 million new Barbanil Silver Coins (about 280 billion yen) as compensation.

Kingdom of Sandra must take over all 832 prisoners of war.

Furthermore, the ransom for Princess Mireille will be 10 million new Barbanil Silver Coins (28 billion yen), and a knight’s ransom would be 1,000 silver coins (2.8 million yen) per person. The rest would be returned free of charge.

We will return the villages from the southern territory leading to the town.

“Fujiwara-san is overcharging. The Kingdom of Sandra does not have this much money.” Elsa stated with an amazed expression.

That’s right. In order to make them not think lightly of me, I overcharged them with this outrageous amount.

Then, Elsa nonchalantly put the parchment with the peace conditions into her pocket.

Her role was to recommend peace, not to sign the peace treaty after all. Because the negotiation for peace will be carried by the diplomats, Elsa didn’t bother arguing.

“Well then, I am leaving. Stay healthy, Fujiwara-san.” She smiled.

“Yes, Elsa-san too.” I nodded.

Thus, Elsa got on the carriage and left. I handed over a [Puzzle Ring] so that she could kill time on the way and also do something about the taciturn knights during the journey.

[Puzzle Ring] [X5] 50,000 yen (List Price 500 yen) x 5 = 250,000 yen (List Price 2,500 yen)

Chapter 047 - At that time, in Kingdom of Sandra

Let’s rewind the time a little bit.

It was when Elsa left Sandoria as a messenger of peace to see Nobuhide.

The militiamen who lost the war gradually arrived at the southern territory.

“Aah... We’ve finally arrived here...” One of them said while gasping for breath.

It was a long, long journey. The deaths of the soldiers who were dispatched together with them had already been drilled into their minds, and the heat in addition to the unsatisfying meals had already eroded their strength.

Both their minds and bodies of have already been worn out. But, they still walked without stopping because there was someone waiting for them at home.

“Hey, just a little bit more.” The encouragement came from the person walking beside him.

The militiamen encouraged each other as they walked the remaining distance. Eventually, the group was divided into several, smaller groups and returned back to their respective villages.

Thus, what echoed in the villages were only the sorrowful cries of the villagers who were told about the death of their loved ones.

Meanwhile, in Count Sarah Bona's mansion...

Count Sarah Bona was the lord of the southwestern territory who had contributed 2,000 militiamen for the Southern Conquest this time. Probably because of overeating, there was a lot of fat on his body. You could tell that his character was similar to his big body - a slow witted person.

Count Sarah Bona was about to have his fourth of his usual six meals that day when the door of dining room were slammed open, and the head butler came in with a pale expression.

"This is terrible! The soldiers who headed to the Beastman Town have just returned! The kingdom's army was defeated!"

Listening to it, Count Sarah Bona only grumbled at the weakness of the kingdom's army, and continued to eat.

The army has already been defeated once. Thus, it was not strange for them to be defeated the second time. Count Sarah Bona assumed that only the

Commander had been killed, and they ran away again, so there was no need to pay attention to it in particular.

“Alright, ask Versas to come here.” He ordered nonchalantly.

Versas was the leader of the militiamen of this territory, and was directly under the command of Count Sarah Bona.

“Ab-About that, Versas and his subordinates were killed in battle...” The head butler sweat nervously.

“Wh... What!?” Count Sarah Bona was truly astonished this time, and dropped the knife and fork in his hands. “Is... Is that true?”

“Y-Yes. The kingdom’s army has been annihilated. In fact, there are less than 500 people who managed to safely return here.”

“No... No way...” The count slumped in his seat.

It was different from the previous retreat that was due to the death of the commander. This means that 5,000 soldiers had been annihilated head on.

Because of this astonishing fact, Count Sarah Bona could not continue eating anymore.

After that, Count Sarah Bona immediately interviewed the militiamen who came to report. Then, he sent scouts to investigate the movement of the beastman town, as well as a messenger to the royal palace.

At the same time, a messenger from the royal palace arrived. Count Sarah Bona met with the messenger from the royal palace in the audience room. After the messenger bowed to the count, he took out the King's letter from his chest pocket, and read it aloud.

"We truly appreciate Count Sarah Bona's great contribution to the South Conquest this time. However, the fight with the beastmen was not fruitful even after our army's strenuous efforts, and resulted with the defeat of the army. Therefore ——"

What was stated was the defeat of the kingdom's troops. In addition, it was said that peace negotiations with the beastman town was currently underway. Also, along with the defeat this time, he was told that they would receive tax exemptions for one year.

"—— that is all." The messenger finished conveying the King's words.

Count Sarah Bona, who had been listening to it with closed eyes, opened his eyes and said.

"...Understood. Messenger-dono must be tired. You should stay at my house

for tonight.”

With those words, the messenger bowed and retreated from the audience room. Count Sarah Bona looked at the messenger leave the audience room with a calm expression.

But, as soon as the messenger was no longer present in the audience room, his blood vessels began to throb visibly from anger.

“Just what does the kingdom think of my territory?!” His meaty cheeks trembled as he cried out. “Tax exemptions for one year? I don’t need such compensation! Is the king making light of me?!”

For a lord, the death of more than a thousand farmers was not something that could be ignored. It wasn’t because of the numbers too. Farmers in their prime had responded to the drafts, and they were lost under the king’s orders.

Certainly, even though each lord was obligated to send soldiers during wartime, the royal palace was not obliged to compensate for any damages.

But, the country was not being invaded, and it lost the war that the royal palace started, so compensation of only giving tax exemptions was too outrageous.

“Don’t underestimate..! Don’t underestimate me..!” Count Sara Bona breathed heavily, hatred and anger clear in his beady eyes.

His territory was located in the south. Count Sarah Bona thought that the cause for this slight was because his territory was in the innermost region without any other allies to depend on. If he betrayed the country, he would only be a mouse that’s trapped in a bag.

Nonetheless, the aggressive attitude of the kingdom was not because of his territory’s position. At first glance, they seemed to have slighted Count Sarah Bona, but on the contrary, what would happen if they compensated Count Sarah Bona heavily for the loss?

For the king to inquire one lord about his or her well being was an act that a king can't take as it may inform other lords how risky the current situation was.

“You will see..!” But, Count Sarah Bona did not notice the real intentions of the king, and his heart was filled with rage.

After a few days passed, the story of the failed Southern Conquest started to spread in the Kingdom of Sandra. The same also happened in the capital, Sandoria. The defeat of the army spread from mouth to mouth in the blink of an eye.

“The Knight Orders... Were defeated..? You’re kidding, right..?” The residents of the castle town treated the rumour with skepticism.

It was natural. The opponents were merely beastmen, so it was impossible to imagine that the humans lost.

“No, it doesn’t seem like a lie. The farmers drafted from the south territory were reduced from the initial number of 4,000 to nearly 1,000, and it seems like they’ve barely escaped with their lives.” One of them gossiped.

“Fool. They were only beastmen. There is no way we could lose.” Another argued.

“Think carefully about the failure of the Southern conquest over a year ago. Was it really because of plague? What if Commander Garland did not fall because of illness, but because he was killed by the beastmen?” Yet another guessed.

“Based on what..?” One curious person cut in.

“The rumour came from the people from the southern territories. Those people were the ones who experienced it. The villagers who have lost their families are still grieving.” Someone stated knowingly.

The defeat of the kingdom’s army already went beyond the level of rumour-mongering. The unshakeable information had been spread since the earlier stages by Count Sarah Bona, who deliberately circulated that information. By doing so, he thought that it would increase the momentum of rebellion against the King.

But, the royal palace had already started to cope with it. The King started drafting from the villages under his direct control, and announced that a drill would be held soon using the drafted soldiers. The scale exceed ten thousand easily in order to show his authority to each lord, and that he had a powerful force to restrain those with treasonous thoughts and behaviour.

◆

In the Imperial Capital of Sandoria, the Polo firm had expanded into a large firm in the recent years. A large mansion was built, there the few employees in the past had already grown in number by several times.

“I’m home!”

It was in the early afternoon when Elsa returned to the Polo Firm where she served as the head of the firm.

It had been around 20 days since she left Sandoria. She had already reported to the castle, and the reward was already in her hands.

“Welcome home, Elsa-san.” When Elsa opened the door to the office, Ryle who was doing paperwork, greeted her.

“How was the wheat?” Elsa asked.

“Everything is proceeding smoothly.” Ryle replied.

When she heard that, she smiled. The real reward that Elsa received from the royal palace was not insignificant silver coins in her hands. It was information.

Elsa, who knew of the defeat of the kingdom’s army earlier than anyone else amongst the commercial firms, had foreseen an upcoming war, and ordered Ryle to buy wheat.

“Right, here. A souvenir.” Elsa took out distorted metal pieces that were connected tightly from her chest pocket.

“This is?” It was something unfamiliar to Ryle.

“It’s a puzzle ring that I got it from Fujiwara-san. If you fiddle with it skilfully, you can disconnect the link. It is quite difficult.” She explained.

“Huh.” Ryle took it and examined it closely.

By the way, although all five puzzle rings she got were complicated, Elsa was able to solve all of them.

“Well, It’s unclear whether this would sell or not even if we mass produced them. I think it would be enough to make them individually and distribute them to our customers.” Elsa mused before her eyes sharpened. “More than that. How is the situation in the north?”

“The Kingdom of Robutas is preparing their army. There is noticeable movement of wheat, salt, and weapons, and mercenaries are also starting to gather. On the other hand, there is no movement from the Shugurin Dukedom.” Ryle reported dutifully.

“Will the Kingdom of Robutas come to attack after all? ...What is the exact situation here?” Elsa questioned.

“The farmers that have been drafted and are performing a military drill. It’s said that the scale is around 20,000 to 30,000 people.” He stated.

“The king really took a drastic measure. Are they trying to empty the castle’s vaults?” She frowned.

To recruit tens of thousands of farmers wasn’t cheap at all since after this, they needed to harvest the spring wheat (wheat sowed in spring). If tens of thousands of labor disappeared, profit will inevitably decrease. It was something that the royal palace would need to bear.

“But well, with this our country shouldn’t be defeated. Alright, let’s sell the wheat earlier. Don’t mind if it’s being requisitioned. In the unlikely event of excessive fund disbursement, we should buy a governmental bond as well.” Elsa instructed.

“Understood.” Ryle nodded.

The Polo Firm under Elsa’s command had started to move along as a whole towards the upcoming war.

One week later, in the northern territory under the king’s direct control, a drill of nearly 30,000 militiamen was held. This caused the country to consume a lot of goods, and each lord, who had looked down on the King, was not able to gauge the limit of king’s strength, and revised their evaluation.

But still, the Kingdom of Robutas was still preparing for war. Mercenary groups from all over the continent came one after another to the Kingdom of Robutas, and gathered close to the border of the Kingdom of Sandra.

Meanwhile, the Kingdom of Sandra had successfully made peace with the Beastman Town. By doing this, the Kingdom of Sandra would not need to worry about the south, and would be able to concentrate its whole power to the north.

Chapter 048 - Mira and Mireille ②

About ten days after Elsa left the town…

Diplomats from the Kingdom of Sandra visited the town, and negotiations for the terms to uphold peace were held.

The diplomats, from beginning till the end, apologised while prostrating. Their speech all started with an apology, but they had absolutely no intention to make this uncomfortable. They bowed so much that those from wolf tribe who were acting as my escorts were surprised.

However, I think they've selected good personnel. It's quite a big deal for them to lower their heads to beastmen.

Well, this town does not associate with other countries, so no matter what they do, the influence of the Kingdom of Sandra won't go down. For that reason, the diplomats probably think that if it was just an apology, then there was no problem with them doing it.

Regarding the peace conditions, there were compromises to some extent.

The conditions were as followed.

The Kingdom of Sandra will pay reparations equivalent to 40 million new Barbanil Silver Coins (around 112 billion yen). They will pay equivalent to 1 million new Barbanil Silver Coins (about 2.8 billion yen) monthly.

The Kingdom of Sandra must take over all 832 prisoners of war. Furthermore, the ransom for Princess Mireille will be equivalent to 10 million new Barbanil Silver Coins (28 billion yen), the knights' equivalent to 1,000 silver coins (2.8 million yen) per person, the others will be returned free of charge, and the ransom will be paid in full all at once.

Kingdom of Sandra will pull out the villages which lead from the Southern territory to the town.

In the future trades, the the price of [Spice] will be raised.

The King of Sandra will make a written pledge to not attack the beastman town again.

I already knew that it would be unavoidable to make a compromise, and after hearing about the situation with the Kingdom of Robutas at the north, there was no other choice. As for the written pledge, I intended to scatter copies of the agreement all over the place should the King of Sandra break the promise.

When the peace conditions were established, the diplomats quickly returned to their country. During their next visit, they will bring the agreement signed by their King, as well as the various items from the conditions.

When summer was over, two visitors appeared. They didn’t come accompanied by horses, so it was very suspicious. After listening to their stories, it seems that they were from the Kingdom of Robutas, and their request was for us to attack Kingdom of Sandra from the south.

As for not being accompanied by horse, it seems like the Kingdom of Sandra was watching the border of South territory tightly, so they didn’t come via the riverside. After all, the Kingdom of Sandra was afraid of the contact between this town and other countries.

Even so, how many countries actually know about this town? When I asked about it, they said that since the town of beastmen defeated the Kingdom of Sandra, word will eventually spread throughout the continent in the future. Our military strength, unknown magic, and there was even a story of us being accompanied by unknown beasts.

Then, as for their proposal, I’ve already made peace with the Kingdom of Sandra. Even if the other party might betray the agreement in the future, I cannot break the promise which I made myself. In addition, I do not intend to move away from here in the first place.

When I conveyed my intentions to not side with any country, the messengers attempted to negotiate, and they left without being disappointed. They had heard that negotiations between this town and the Kingdom of Sandra were underway, and tried find out if there was an alliance between us or not.

Even so, it was painful since there was no way to obtain information, so I do not understand the situation of the continent at all. For example, when it comes to war, it could certainly be said as the ultimate defense if I knew the enemy's situation when they attack.

And then I noticed that there was a possibility that numerous human countries might band together and surround this town. However, I never thought of losing even though human country united into one. In the worst case, I will run away, or so I have simulated numerous times.

After the messengers from the Kingdom of Robutas, people from the Kingdom of Sandra came accompanied by numerous carriages. After receiving the official agreement and pledge from the messengers, I went to Mireille to ascertain its authenticity. I did not speak about the circumstances, and only showed the signature and the seal, and Mireille judged that it was truly from the King.

I then instructed the beastmen to immediately retrieve the prisoners from the South. The prisoners of war will be handed over the day after tomorrow.

◆

Mireille sat quietly as usual in one of the inn's room. Her body did not improve and remained weak.

"It has been decided that you will be returned. Tomorrow morning, you will be handed over to the humans from your country." Mira told her as she served her dinner.

"Is that so?" Mireille replied plainly.

However, when Mira was about to leave the room, Mireille spoke once more.

"I have one request."

“.....” Mira did not turn around or answer, but she stopped walking.

“There should be reversi in this town. Could you bring that here?” When Mireille finished stating her request, Mira left without complaining.

After Mireille finished her meal, Mira returned to the room with a wooden box containing a wooden board and stones.

Mira placed the reversi on the desk and left with the tableware. But, Mireille stopped her just as she was about to leave.

“Wait, I can’t play it alone. Accompany me.”

“...I have never played it before.” Mira replied curtly.

“Ah, I see. I’ve only played it three times too, you know. So, how about a fair match between beginners?” Mireille seemed somewhat happy.

Mira sat down somewhat reluctantly, and after Mireille taught her the rules, the game started. In the quiet room, the sound of stones being placed resounded, and eventually the game was over.

“Hmm, it is my win.” Mireille said, a small smile lifting her thin cheeks.

Mira frowned a little while staring at the board.

“What? Don’t sulk. In reversi, it’s important to take the corners.” As Mireille boasted about her victory, there was slight rise in her tone. The corners of her eyes drooped, and the corners of her mouth raised; she looked happy.

Mira shifted to face Mireille.

“Is there any meaning to this?”

It was in no way an excuse. Mira truly thought that playing reversi was a meaningless act.

“Right, it might not mean anything.” Mireille thought.

If it was a long time ago, it would be much better for her to swing the sword many times rather than being hooked to something like this. Mireille thought that Mira was the same as the past her.

“Some time ago, a man named Romatto was here. I heard that that guy played reversi with the beastmen to deepen their friendship, right?” As Mireille said so, Mira became even more sullen.

Humans and beastmen do not get along. When you think about it, it was a big mistake.

Such thoughts were unconsciously expressed on Mira's face. Mireille thought that she was rather easy to understand.

"Ah, I'm not really trying to be friends with you in particular. Hey, let's do it again. Listen, the corners are important. The corners." Mireille stated firmly. After finding the winning method, she boasted and showed off like a child.

"....." Mira picked up the stone in silence.

The sound of stones clicking resounded once again.

Naturally, Mireille opened her mouth.

“...I thought I could do anything. I guess it could be said that I felt invincible. There was no one who could win against me in the Knight Order.” The content was something about herself. While looking at the board’s surface, Mireille continued to speak. “However, I am only a frog in the well.

The army was defeated without being able to return even one arrow. I ran away, and in the end, I have become a prisoner now. Well, rather than because the world is a wide place, maybe it’s because this town is special.”

Mira simply listened quietly. Without looking at each other, Mira and Mireille continued playing seriously.

“Many soldiers died. I was also in favour for this war. If I had opposed it, then some people from the army that attacked this place would not have died. Even though I was able to shamelessly survive, I feel miserable. Even if I lose so much weight, I am still alive. ...Surely it’s because I am afraid of death.”

What was the reason for Mireille becoming so abnormally thin? The reason

was because Mireille used the body manipulation technique. The characteristic of this secret art was to raise the power of the body above its limit using magical power. But, the risk was also high. Therefore, even if she ate something nourishing, she could still easily die from the sickness in her heart.

But, she was not dead yet. Mireille thought that the fear of death was something that was barely supporting herself.

“Well, I wonder what I should do.” Mireille raised her face to look at Mira, who resembled herself.

However, it was still a question for herself.

Then, Mira turned her brown eyes towards Mireille.

“How should I know?” It was only that. After saying that, Mira returned her eyes back to the board again.

“That certainly seems like something you’d say.” Mireille gave a faint smile, and the sound of stones being placed resounded in the quiet room resounded once more.

Before long, the game came to an end, and Mira stood up.

“This is enough, right? I will give the board to you.” Then, Mira left the room.

Mireille looked at the left side of the board. The game ended with Mireille’s overwhelming victory. Mira did not try to stubbornly strike the corner, but she seemed to have tried to win against Mireille instead.

She was awfully pure and dazzling. For some reason, Mireille became fond of her.

The next morning, the one who brought the meal was not Mira, but another beastman instead. When the meal was over, she went outside the gate while being escorted by three beastmen.

“Why isn’t Mira here?” Mireille asked, but her escorts do not answer back. They were only there to do their jobs.

After a while, they arrived at the northern gate. The gate was open, and a man from the Kingdom of Sandra was there. The injured boarded the lined up carriages while the dissatisfied knights were forced to walk.

Mireille stepped forward. The people from the Kingdom of Sandra were surprised to see Mireille, who was so thin that she was like another person.

“Fujiwara-dono, is Mira not coming here?” Mireille asked Nobuhide, who was nearby.

Nobuhide then asked her guards, and they replied that she was not on duty.

Mireille was placed in the carriage for injured people. Eventually, the carriage started to move and left the town steadily. Nobuhide returned to the town's gate too.

Mireille was looking at the town from the back seat. She felt unspeakable loneliness in her chest.

"I am getting weaker." Mireille sneered at herself.

But then, a familiar shadow entered her sight. Mireille became startled, and hurriedly used the body manipulation technique to strengthen her eyesight. Above the stone wall was a person staring her way with her usual sullen face.

"Hmm." Mireille's lips drew up in a gentle arc. A smile unconsciously

appeared on her face.

Mireille thought that this was sufficient. Selfishly saying that she resembled her and trying to become friends, it was only to comfort herself. However, the lie that was filling the empty gap inside her chest became a positive thing before long.

She was simply yearning for self-satisfaction. It was not the fear of death which kept her body from dying out. It was an existence called Mira.

Chapter 049 - End of Prologue ①

When it was mid-autumn, the daytime temperature also fell, so it felt like time flew by faster somehow. Although the highest temperature was still 25°C, but because the air was dry, it was a very refreshing temperature.

So, on that day, I sat on the chair under the parasol set in the premises of my house, and enjoyed the afternoon.

While holding a glass that contained cola, which might as well be liquid gold from how much I spent, in my hand, I sipped at it with a straw.

Un, drinking Coke in another world has a exceptional taste.

“Kukukuku.” While placing the glass of cola on the side table, a villainous laugh leaked out from my mouth.

But, that couldn’t be helped since I was reading the [Town Data] right now.

[Funds] 466,237,787,000 yen

Before the Kingdom of Sandra attacked, my funds were only about 300 billion. Now, it has become 460 billion.

“Fufufu.” I laughed to myself once more.

With this money, I can buy most of the things, even if they were from the Modern Era.

I can’t stop laughing.

If I keep trading like this, I can achieve one trillion yen quickly. When that happens, the only condition left to change the [Era Setting] to [Modern] would only be having a population of 10,000 people.

However, that was the problem. The current population just exceeded 2,300 people. The population growth in a year did not even reach 200 people. The birth rate of the beastmen was too low.

Before, I have asked each chief about their tribe's sex life with blushing cheeks. From the story, it seemed like every tribe was doing fine for the time being.

But, could it be because of their nature? The natural conception rate of the beastmen seemed to be quite low. Furthermore, although the birthrate of the Kobold and Goblin tribe were not low, the survival rate of their children was not high.

Well, I was certain that the beastmen were not as fertile as humans so far. No, it might because of their low fertility that they were not seen as a threat to

humans. That could have been why they had survived until now.

Now then, I wonder what I should do to achieve a population of 10,000.

Should I wait for the population to increase to 10,000 people steadily? However, if I did so, I wouldn't know how many decades it would take to change the [Era Setting] to [Modern].

From the beginning, I was from the [Modern] era, but I also want to look at the world of in the [Future]. Even in my previous world, the future was a "world" I had never experienced. When I imagined what fun it could be, I can't suppress the throb of excitement in my chest.

As expected, I should actively approach the population problem.

That's right. The next time the Kingdom of Sandra attacks, should we invade back and take away some territory? If it's like that, we can expand the town and make the humans migrate. With this, a population of 10,000 could be easily achieved.

However, I feel that it would be difficult to harmonize the humans and the beastmen. There were people from the Wolf tribe who were friends with Romatto, but this was only with one particular individual. It can't be said that tensions with the humans have lessened.

It was indeed troublesome.

(What should I do...)

As I thought about that, sleepiness seized me suddenly. I used to be what others would call a lively person. However, unlike the busy days from my previous world, there was much time to ponder in this world.

(Let's slowly think about the population after taking a nap.)

I closed the [Town Data] and closed my eyes. My field of vision became dark as my eyelids fell shut.

(That reminds me. I wonder if the Kingdom of Sandra is fighting with the Kingdom of Robutas right now. If the Kingdom of Sandra loses, I wonder what would happen to Elsa?)

Suddenly, a flash of worry stabbed my heart.

(Well, Elsa is a merchant, and since she's smart, I think she should be okay.)

Anyway, I am quite interested in the results of the war between the two countries, but there was nothing I could do about it. There was a saying that "good things come to those who wait". As long as the Kingdom of Sandra was safe, the trade would continue.

Thus, I should only do what I can now. So, for the time being, I will entrust

myself to this warm sunshine and enjoy this calm siesta.

Then, I felt a hard lump and some pressure on my stomach. When I opened my eyes, I saw Catherine pressing her nose to my belly.

“What is it, Catherine?” I asked while caressing her large head.

Catherine gave a short groan. She probably wanted to go for a walk. Catherine and I had a tacit understanding, and we could generally understand what each other was thinking.

“Oh well, this can’t be helped.” I sighed heavily.

It seems like I need to postpone the siesta.

I got onto Catherine and decided to patrol the town.

“Fujiwara-sama!” As I went around the town, the children gathered around when they saw me.

It was a pain to be a popular person. I took out some konpeitou from my chest pockets and handed them to the children.

[TLC: konpeitou is a japanese sugar candy]

Soon, autumn was over, and winter had arrived. Sometimes, the temperature fell to the negative range during midnight till early morning, so it was very cold inside.

One day, I was told that the war with the Kingdom of Robutas was over by some officials from the Kingdom of Sandra who came to trade.

It ended with the victory of the Kingdom of Sandra. Even though it was a very intense war, the Kingdom of Sandra somehow managed to defend their territory.

I think that that was good. For now, the two human countries were able to maintain their stalemate. There could be no better result for us.

Then, the officials told me that they wanted me to increase the amount of traded goods.

Although I should have exported quite a fair amount until now, it seems like they've already restrained themselves quite a bit so that other countries wouldn't know of our existence. But, it seems like their financial budget was currently being pressed so much that they couldn't do anything else.

Even though they came out victorious in this war, it was just to the point of being able to protect their territory. There was nothing else gained from it, so it

could be said that they simply lost their soldiers and fortune in vain.

Therefore, they needed to expand their trading volume.

It was not a bad thing for me. If I had to have a particular concern about it, it would be the existence of this town being made known to other countries. This was something I want to avoid with all my might.

This place was called the town of beastmen. For those humans who disdained the beastmen, none of them would be pleased when that much wealth was being gathered here.

While emphasizing to them to not make this place known, I permitted the increase in the amount of goods being traded.

Then, after some time passed, people from the Kingdom of Sandra came again. However, they did not come with guards this time. The hurried

messengers had not come to trade.

“The western feudal lord has betrayed our country.” The messenger reported after I greeted him.

The story was like this. From northwest to southwest, certain areas in the western area betrayed the Kingdom of Sandra and declared that they were under the rule of the Shugurin Dukedom instead. However, because the Kingdom of Sandra was exhausted from the war, they couldn’t do anything about it, and could only appeal to the church regarding this breach. However, they did not seem to have gotten a favorable reply.

This was because the land that the Shugurin Dukedom acquired this time was not taken by war, and the people living on that land declared that they belonged to the Sugurin Dukedom by their own free will.

“The ones who betrayed the kingdom includes the lord of the southwestern territory, Count Sarah Bona. He knows about the origin of [Sugar] and [Spice], so the Shugurin Dukedom would certainly come to make contact.” He explained.

After the messenger warned us, he quickly left.

Contact... If it’s just business, then I won’t care. I will do as I wish here.

In the past, Count Sarah Bona had sent militiamen to attack this town, so he should know how terrifying this place was. I don’t think that he would carelessly attack again.

Perhaps what the messenger from the Kingdom of Sandra wanted to say was to not trade with the Shugurin Dukedom.

But, even after a month had passed, there was still no sign of people from the Shugurin Dukedom coming to this town. Instead, other visitors came from the north. This is what I was waiting for — new residents of the town.

The first one to appear was the Fish tribe. Like their name suggests, they have the face of fish. It seemed like they had come from the Shugurin Dukedom. They were large in number, easily exceeding 1,000 people.

Rather, I wonder how these fish can live out of water? How did they breathe?

Next were the Bird and Snake tribes. They came from all over the Shugurin Dukedom.

(Another bird tribe?)

While thinking so, I learnt that there were also different types of birds. The Bird tribe in the town had the appearance of hawks, while the newcomers were black like crows.

As for the Snake Tribe, even though they were supposedly snakes, they had

two hands and feet. How they evolved into this was certainly a mystery. No, perhaps they had evolved from lizards even if they were currently called snakes.

For the time being, because the number of people who could enter the town was limited, I decided to let them live in the houses in the west. The houses were insufficient, so they needed to make do with simple tents made from cloths and woods for now. Because we could supply as much as firewood as needed, they would not freeze in winter.

Chapter 050 - End of Prologue ②

The three tribes, Fish, Bird and Snake, came to the town almost at the same time. And just like this, the town's population finally exceeded 4,000 people. I can actually see the shadow of a population of 10,000 now.

I am really overjoyed by it.

By the way, since I expected fatigue from the long journey, I granted the Fish tribe a holiday in the name of environmental improvement. But, that lasted only for a day.

Someone who does not work should not eat.

I hope that they'll start working soon, but for now, I will just go to their place.

I've already met the Fish tribe members numerous times, but since our relationship was still shallow, I can't be careless.

I put on my battle gear and got on the armored car. And on the way, I picked up some people from the Wolf tribe, including Chief Jiharu, and left from the west gate.

I drove the armored car slowly to the area where the Fish tribesmen live. Then, everyone, who was walking along the road, got down onto their knees and lowered their heads.

Somehow, they looked very respectful. No, the original residents of the town also bent their waists, so the three new tribes became even more respectful.

Chief Jiharu, who saw this for the first time, began talk about doing the same as them from now on. Of course, I declined and said that it was not necessary to do so.

“Even so, there are a lot of people.” I muttered while driving.

There was more than 1,000 people in Fish tribe alone. If I put the Bird and Snake tribes together, there would be over 2,000 people.

Because the brick houses that had been built before were not enough, my sight was filled with tents lined up in rows. I intend to change all of them into brick houses in the future, but it will take a considerable amount of time to do so.

Before long, we arrived at our destination. Right at the border of the brick houses and tents was where the chief of the Fish tribe lived.

I stopped the armored car in the middle of road and got off with the wolf tribesmen.

[TL: you mc don’t park the car in the middle of the road....]

Then, the chief of the Fish tribe, who was waiting in front of the house, lowered their head to the ground.

“Fujiwara-sama, we are truly thankful that you accepted us at this time.” He stated worshipfully.

How many times was he gonna say this? Like everyone else from before, the chief was also prostrating himself before me.

No, although it was similar, it was slightly different. When a chief does this, it meant that the entire tribe was lowering themselves before me.

“Please stand up.” I urged.

“Yes.” At my words, the Chief stood up.

He was about 2 meters tall, so it was actually quite intimidating. His eyes were round and half protruding. He had no nose, and his mouth was rather large. There was a cut in his cheeks which seemed to be gills, judging by the way it was slowly moving. Perhaps the gills played the role of a nose? His skin was blue, and his hands didn’t have anything like webbing or fins.

Even though they were called the Fish tribe, they were clearly a tribe meant for living on land.

“Have you gotten used to the life here?” I asked.

“It is a wonderful life, yes.” He said humbly.

I have heard of their story before. It seemed like they’ve been oppressed by humans when they were still living in the Shugurin Dukedom.

However, unlike the beastmen from the Kingdom of Sandra, they lived in the sea.

Humans generally don’t approach the sea since sea beasts live there. So to catch fish, they needed to risk their lives.

The Fish tribe eats fish. I thought that that was cannibalistic, but when I thought more carefully, fish in the oceans also lived by eating fish smaller than themselves.

Even humans could be roughly classified as mammals, so maybe it was cannibalism when we eat pigs and cows?

[ED: Are you saying that humans like pigs and cows?? We're under different classifications for families for one. We're way too different physically for that to be cannibalism.)

Anyway, while they were catching fish, humans from the Shugurin Dukedom specially told them about this town.

What kind of intentions did the people from the Shugurin Dukedom have to do such a thing? Were they planning on doing this as a favour to me? Or, was it simply because they wanted the Fish tribe to leave?

Even when I ponder over it, I can't come to a proper conclusion.

"You do not have to trouble yourself by giving me this much reverence, you know?" I sighed.

"Yes, I am sorry." I don't know whether this was their habit or not since the chief lowered his head yet again.

"I came today to allocate fields for you to cultivate. Since you live here now, you must work as well." I stated. The survey of the fields has been completed

after all.

Afterwards, I give them fields according to their numbers as well as farming tools so that they would be able to cultivate them right away.

“All the members of my tribe pledge to work seriously.” The chief promised.

But, I couldn’t read any emotions from his eyes when he said that.

On that day, the Fish tribesmen received their fields, and I did the same to the Bird and Snake tribes the very next day.

Winter passed and spring came. Five years had passed since I arrived in this world. It was finally my sixth year here.

To celebrate the arrival of a new year along with the increase in residents, I decided to hold a banquet for the first time in a while.

The north gate still stank of blood from the fight against the Kingdom of Sandra. There, a large banquet consisting of 4,000 people was held at the south instead.

“Everyone, please treat me well from now on!” The banquet began with the greeting from the chief of the Fish tribe.

A thunderous applause arose from the other beastmen.

Regarding the newly arrived Fish tribe, there was no particular problem according to the report. Everyone was doing well so far. Besides to myself, the Fish tribe was also respectful towards the existing residents, so they had a good reputation.

As the banquet progressed, the chiefs came to offer some liquor to me. While exchanging drinks, I had conversation with them.

Currently, I was drinking with Raccoon tribe’s chief.

“Are the camel twins doing well?” I asked.

Spring was the when camels gave birth. Just the other day, the camel being taken care of by the raccoon tribe was giving birth. It was a very difficult delivery, so the people from the Raccoon tribe and I were watching over it attentively. When it finally gave birth, there were twins.

The Raccoon tribesmen were shedding tears of joy, as if their own child had been born. At that time, I also teared up.

“Yes, they are doing fine. Please come over to see them again. Those kids will also be pleased.” The raccoon tribe chief’s needle-like moustache, which extended from his nose, shook as he said it shyly.

Thus, the banquet ended in a great success. The relations with the beastman tribe were also good.

The town continued to grow steadily.

One day in May...

While carrying some liquor in daytime, I visited Chief Jiharu’s house.

Because I had informed him in advance by phone, it shouldn’t be troublesome. ...Probably. And this time, I had a proper reason for visiting.

“Welcome, come in.” Chief Jiharu bowed like usual.

(As expected of Chief Jiharu.)

“Could you grill this?” I lifted the first-class meat I also brought over.

“Oh, please excuse me.” Jiharu received it and handed it to another person in the house.

Jiharu doesn’t have a wife. She had already passed away. The only people in this home were those who had lost their parents.

I was then led to the room in the back, and we sat at the table face to face. I poured the liquor I brought into the two glasses on the table. Both of us drank, and our gulping sounds resounded in the otherwise quiet room.

“Has anything happened recently?” I asked Chief Jiharu while placing the empty glass back onto the table.

“Hmm, there is nothing in particular that I can think of... Is there anything bothering you?” Chief Jiharu replied.

When the two of us drink together, there would no one designated to pour the liquor. This was something which Chief Jiharu and I agreed on during the first time we drank together in order not to create a fuss.

“Compared to the past, I feel that there is a lack in drive.” I sighed.

was it since I repelled the Kingdom of Sandra last summer? Even Chief Jiharu seemed to be losing energy. Even now, when I sit in front of him, I could see that Chief Jiharu looked like an old man.

“Ha ha, I see. It might be because I am also old.” Chief Jiharu chuckled and nodded his head. “Because Fujiwara-sama let us live on this peaceful land, the load on my shoulders has been taken off gradually. I am thinking of handing the command over to my son. I wonder if I will be able to live the rest of my life just farming leisurely.”

I guess he was feeling secure about the future of the Wolf tribe. No doubt it was because we easily defeated the army from the Kingdom of Sandra. There was no need for him to steel himself for the sake of his tribe, so he intended to live just as he should for his age.

I refilled the glasses silently. Somehow, I feel lonely.

With regards to my personal relationships, the one I had with Chief Jiharu was the longest and deepest one. The number of times we drank together easily exceed 100 times.

Hearing such words from his mouth... It seemed to suggest that he would not have any regrets when he dies.

Everyone grow old and dies. It was inevitable. I will also die someday.

Incidentally, when I die, I thought about what would happen to this town. If I die, the town would probably fall into human hands. We had sufficient power to remain independent, but without me, they wouldn't be able to do that. If that happened, this town will become a colony of the humans.

(What kind of lives would they have?)

While thinking that far ahead, I forcibly broke off my train of thought. It was not something to think about now.

(I will think about it slowly later on.)

I decided as I invited Chief Jiharu to play a round of shogi. The sound of the pieces clacking disappeared because of the conversation between Chief Jiharu and me.

"Ex-Excuse me." Eventually, a nervous voice piped up, and the sliding door

was opened.

A girl was carrying the cooked meat which I had brought today. Her name was Meg. She lived next to this house, and was the child of Chief Jiharu's son.

She used to be quite naughty in the past, but after some years had passed, the child-like innocence had disappeared. Well, although I said she had grown, she has not even reached 10 years old yet. She was still a kid.

Meg excused herself again, and placed the dish next to Chief Jiharu and I.

Even so, I realised that recently, when I come over to Chief Jiharu's house, she will generally be here. I also know the reason why. Chief Jiharu doesn't mention it, but this girl would be the daughter of the next chief, so it was a scheme to attach Meg, who was his grandchild, to me.

However, I am not a lolicon, so it's just a fruitless endeavour.

Even so, marriage, huh? When I celebrate my birthday this year, I will be 26 years old. Even in Japan, which has a late marriage age, I am old enough to think about marriage.

[TL: shut up, I am 27.][TLC: I am 23 T.T][ED: I'm 21 :D]

I am also receiving similar approaches from other the tribes too. Even though I declined them indirectly, their offense was still very intense, especially when it's a woman and girl who has a face close to that of a human. Oh, now when I think about it, that has happened numerous times.

But, I also have to consider my position. It would be easy to be tied to one of the tribal women, but it could lead to discord in this town.

As expected, marriage will be impossible for time being.

Afterwards, I played shogi with chief Jiharu while drinking and continuing to enjoy pleasant conversation.

If possible, I would prefer to spend my time like this for a long time, or I thought.

The following day, I racked my brains to make a great change in some parts of the town's structure.

Until now, except for the portions that were distributed to each tribe with discretion, I kept all of the harvest and used the [Sell] function them while handing out food I bought with my ability every month.

But from now on, I will try to make a new plan so that the beastmen would be able to only eat and live by what they grew themselves.

I needed to change the way the town should be in order for the beastmen to live in peace if something happened to me.

Chapter 051 - End of Prologue ③

The Imperial Castle, Sandoria...

Everyday, the King of Sandra struggled with petitions and reports which had amassed into a mountain on his desk in the office.

“Urggh....” His face was grim as groans escaped from his mouth.

This wasn’t surprising because even though the Kingdom managed to win against the Robutas Kingdom after a fierce battle, the western lord found a chance to betray him, and submitted to the Shugurin Dukedom. Furthermore, as the expenditure from the war was extreme, the castle storehouse was now exhausted. Other than that, he also needed to deal with the settlement’s reduced income and swelling expenses. It really made his stomach churn.

“What should I do..?” He sighed while going through the reports one by one.

As a minor digression, the papers that were used for the reports were a kind of recycled paper. It was developed by a certain country in recent years, and has circulated around the world. Each parchment of this new recycled paper was cheap, costing only 1/100 of the usual 2~3 New Barbanil silver coins (5,600 yen ~ 8,400 yen) per piece.

Returning back to the main subject...

“Excuse me.” An old man entered the office. It was the Chief Advisor.

“What is it?” The king shifted his gaze from the documents and to glare at the Chief Advisor.

The king who had his territory robbed was not in a good mood. He feel resentment in his heart, especially toward the Chief Advisor who did not foresee the lord’s betrayal. Nonetheless, neither the Chief Advisor, nor any civil or military officers could have foreseen this, so he didn’t have anyone to take it out on. It couldn’t be helped since the Shugurin Dukedom was able to hide their

true aim until now.

“I have received a notice from the person who had headed towards the beastman town.” The Chief Advisor pretended not to notice the king’s attitude and carried out his duty.

Upon hearing the words “beastman town”, the king frowned, his face full of displeasure.

This was because the betrayal of western lord was originally caused by the beastman town.

To be honest, the king was fed up with the beastman town. He definitely does not want to deal with them. If someone told him to attack that town again, he would seriously consider cutting his or her head off without hesitation.

“It seems that the population of the town has increased significantly. They couldn’t be housed inside the houses that were outside of the castle, so they are using tents.” The elderly man reported.

“How much?” The king grunted.

“Going with a rough estimate, it was said to have increased by around 1,000.” The Chief Advisor stated.

“Hmmm...” The king leaned back on his seat and started to think.

The population of Beastman town has increased by at least 1,000 people. That was a large number that couldn’t be ignored.

The reproductive capability of beastmen was low. However, as the population increases, the number of births will also increase, so the low reproduction rate will become irrelevant. This figure of 1,000 could become the key to population growth. It would become a less favorable situation for the Kingdom of Sandra. Nevertheless, they can’t do anything for now. Eventually though, they would have to do something about it.

“Did they come from the western side?” The king asked.

“It seems so.” The elderly man nodded.

“However, what is the meaning of this? How did they know about the existence of the beastman town?” The king frowned. “The Rusiel river flows at the east of the town. Even if they move south along the river, it could be pure coincidence for them to discover the town.

But, from the west, unless the existence of the town was known, they wouldn’t even try to go in that direction.”

The Wolf tribe and the other old residents of the town were the ones who had been driven away by humans. All they wished was to find a place to live in peace in the south of enormous the Rusiel river.

However, the people from west should be based in the sea. So, unless they

know about the location of the town, they would not move so far east, and would absolutely not reach the beastman town.

“It is the Shugurin Dukedom. They deliberately informed them about the beastman town. That country seems quite formidable.” The Chief Advisor stated plainly.

However, the king felt that there was something else included in the word “formidable”.

“...I don’t understand what are you trying to say.” The king grumbled.

Was the Shugurin Dukedom trying to gain favor with Nobuhide by sending him new residents? Such thoughts appear in his mind, but he thought that it was insufficient for the Chief Advisor to use the word “formidable” if it was just that.

Another thing that came to mind was the possibility of the Shugurin Dukedom trying to increase the mouths the town had to feed and create a food shortage.

However, Nobuhide could just refuse to accept the new residents. Besides, given how they gave meals to almost 1,000 of prisoners of the Kingdom of Sandra three times, the town should have ample food supply, enough to not worry about a food shortage at the very least.

After that, he thought that the new beastmen would destroy the town from the inside like poison, but he denied it immediately. The Shugurin Dukedom was a human nation, so for them to make the beastmen rebel was absurd. There was no way a beastman could trust humans.

Then, the Chief Advisor said. “It was reported that they saw a fish tribe.”

“A Fish tribe? That Fish tribe?” The king raised his eyebrows.

“Yes.” The elderly man nodded.

There was a reason for the king to say that fish tribe. The cause of the

beastmen being driven from their ancestral lands was because the church “prohibited war among nations”. Before that declaration was made, before the present king of Sandra ascended the throne, the Fish tribe had been expelled from the Kingdom of Sandra. That was because the Fish tribe attacked human villages recklessly.

“But, what about it? The ones residing inside the town are beastmen. Aren’t their relations with other beastmen good?” The king questioned.

“No. The Fish tribe is cowardly, arrogant, crafty, fierce, and very selfish. At the beginning, they will ask for help. That is how they approached their target village. When life is difficult, they will ask for help. In exchange for food, they will work hard as villagers. The Fish tribe will work seriously in the beginning. However, once the Fish tribe obtains peace, they will reveal their true nature soon. They will begin to complain about working under humans, forgetting the kindness they received, and begin to attack the village.” The Chief Advisor explained smoothly, speaking as if he had seen it. “Their pride knows no bounds. As soon as their safety is guaranteed, their pride will swell up and they will try to fill their greed. For these people, they won’t differentiate between races. They will act as they desire. The Fish tribe is such a tribe. Since Fujiwara has welcomed them, it will be a matter of time before something big occurs.

“I see… So this is the Shugurin Dukedom’s aim huh. Using the fish tribe as a deadly poison...” The king nodded, convinced.

In addition to the war with the Kingdom of Robutas, the Shugurin Dukedom had also extended their dirty hands to snatch the western region of the Kingdom of Sandra.

“So, what should we do? If we inform Fujiwara about the Fish tribe, will that guy’s heart not lean towards us a bit?” The king asked.

“Let’s see how things go for now. If a rebellion occurs, the Shugurin Dukedom would also move. At that time, we can profit while they fight. If the beastman town was defeated by the Shugurin Dukedom’s scheme, we can just give superficial help to Fujiwara to make him feel grateful.” The elderly man advised.

“Hmm...” The king mulled over his options.

There was no actual need to help the beastman town. The both of them were well aware of how strong the town was. However, if the Kingdom of Sandra meddled and created friendly ties, it would damage the Shugurin Dukedom

while giving Nobuhide a strong impression, which might cause him to reduce the price for [Spice].

When he finally thought to that point, the king grinned. This was truly a smile from the bottom of his heart after these months full of stress.

“Alright, strengthen the intelligence on the Shugurin Dukedom. Hopefully, there is an opportunity to regain the western region.” The king ordered.

◆

This is Nobuhide Fujiwara’s diary.

Day X of May

Humans armed with weapons showed up at the north of the town. They numbered about 1,000 people, but it was unclear which side they were from. Immediately, I made the people living in the houses on the western side enter inside the stone walls, and the town entered into its battle formation.

The opponent army simply advanced, and there was no messenger sent for negotiations. Therefore, in case they are not enemies, we gave a warning bombardment.

Shells were fired and landed hundreds of meters in front of the army, and they stopped moving. Then, the troops dispersed in every direction opposite of the town. They were clearly enemies, so it was not necessary to go easy on them any longer.

By my orders, we fired at the them mercilessly. However, the enemy escaped after a few shots. It was simply too disappointing.

Perhaps they were only scouting?

I did not pursue the enemies who ran away because their equipment was too poor. Even if I caught them, it would not be profitable. For now, let’s listen to the stories from the wounded enemy soldiers.

It turned out that the enemy was from the Shugurin Dukedom.

Day △ of May

A few days after fighting against the Shugurin Dukedom, led by the Fish tribe, those who lived outside of the town came to say that they wanted to live within the stone walls.

Because an enemy actually attacked, I can’t deny them and say that they’re being selfish. I also want to do something, but there was no space to let everyone live inside comfortably.

Although I can arrange it for either the Crow or the Snake tribes, it's hard to please everyone. If you give preferential treatment to one of the tribes who came in the same time period period, those who were not given preferential treatment would become dissatisfied.

So, while asking them to be patient, I treated them to liquor. Liquor is very convenient at such a time.

Day ○ of May

The chief of the Fish tribe told me to be careful of the Crow and Snake tribes. When I asked for the reason why, he said that they were cowardly, arrogant, crafty, fierce, and extremely selfish. He also said that they were very vulgar and liked to lie.

I kept the warning in mind just in case. I also told the chief of the Fish tribe to never say it again. Even though the town was in good shape, I would still like to be spared from conflict between the tribes.

Day × of June

I celebrate my breaking through to 500 billion yen. Finally, the amount of [Funds] has exceeded 500 billion yen after trading with the Kingdom of Sandra. It seemed like [1 trillion yen funds] can indeed be achieved in less than 2 years.

Regarding the other condition of having a population of 10,000 people to change the [Era Setting] to [Modern], I am currently considering if I should attack the Shugurin Dukedom for that.

Nevertheless, what should I do if the [Era Setting] becomes [Modern]? In my heart, I want to teach the beastmen how wonderful the modern era is. I am sure that the beastmen will be surprised at how convenient modern technology is, and be able to live better lives. It would definitely make me happy because I lived in the modern era in my previous world, and I am very proud of it.

Day ▽ of June

Someone from the Crow tribe told me to be careful of the Fish tribe and the Snake tribe.

He said that they were cowardly, arrogant, crafty, fierce, and extremely selfish. They were also extremely vulgar and liked to lie.

They were lines I had heard from somewhere before.

Day □ of June

Recently, I feel that the people in the town have become lazy. Is it because of the summer heat?

According to Chief Jiharu, people, who were lagging behind on their jobs, were scattered everywhere in the morning.

This wasn’t good.

I gathered the chiefs of each tribe and braced myself to warn them.

No, well... In the first place, I am the laziest, so they might not want to hear about it from me...

Day ▲ of June

I was told to be careful of the Fish and Crow tribe by the Snake tribe. The content was almost the same as what the Fish and Crow tribe had said before.

Honestly, I really wanted to glare at them and yell “again?!”.

At this point, they don’t need to warn me anymore. Since they’re trying to sabotage each other, it is not necessarily a lie, I suppose.

However, I think that it’ll be okay as long as I keep an eye on them.

June

I received a report from the Wolf tribe that there were less camels in the ranch than usual. When I asked people from each tribe, they said that some of them had run away. Well, it is hard to say that the camels have gentle temperaments, so it can’t be helped if they escape.

The surroundings were basically a wasteland, so they would return if they become hungry. However, I told them to report anything as soon as possible from now on.

By the way, I feel that the atmosphere around the town was becoming tenser recently. Sometimes, there seems to be fights occurring.

Day ○ of June

A report from Chief Jiharu stated he found that gambling was taking place inside the town. The organisers were the fish tribe. Night after night, they have been drinking and gambling till late, and that is the reason why the people in the town have become lazy. This may also be the cause of the bad atmosphere in the town.

Of course, I banned the gambling. The chief of Fish tribe also prostrated on the ground and pledged to never do it again.

Day × of July

“How long are we going live in this house?”

“Let me live inside the town!”

“Because humans are scary, I would like to drink liquor and make myself less nervous. So, give me liquor.”

Recently, the three races, including the Fish tribe, that were living outside the stone walls had come to me to demand something.] Their original modest personalities couldn’t be seen any longer. In addition, they do not seem to be working that much.

As expected I also became mad, and told them that I’d cut down their meals if they don’t work.

However, they argued that the other tribes didn’t work too, so why should only they be punished. At least, that was what the Fish tribe had said. The newcomer Fish tribe is outrageous, but the original diligence of those beastmen who came here before them was gone too.

Did they gamble until late in the night?

But, when I asked everyone, they just shook their heads.

It was not gambling. If so, did they become accustomed to being given things, and lost their motivation to work?

Anyway, this is useless. So, I appointed those of the Wolf tribe whom I trusted the most to be vigilante corps. Although it’s a bit forceful, I also published a notice that anyone who didn’t listen to directives again and again will be punished by being hit firmly with a stick.

In the end, it’s only to those who do it “repeatedly”. I didn’t not want to do this. However, if they do not listen to what I say, then there is no way other than to penalise them.

I hope that everyone would wake up with this action, but...

Chapter 052 - End of Prologue ④

The first one the Fish tribe's poisonous claws dug into was the Kobold tribe, who had frequently been in the area where the Fish tribe lived for construction work.

The day Nobuhide distributed money to the residents of the town, the Fish tribe tried to find someone frivolous from the Kobold tribe, and invited him to gamble.

Gambling was simple. As long as the result was unpredictable, all you had to do was to bet money. For example, throwing a stone up into the sky and betting which direction it would fall. Even though it was such a simple thing whereby betting money was considered gambling, it was unique in this world where the entertainment was very limited.

The variety of gambling games the Fish tribe prepared was immense. Bug fights, mouse racing, guessing games, et. cetera.

However, in reality, those games were by no means unpredictable. The same result always occurred when the Fish tribe participated. They would first let their target win and then praise the target so that they would get overconfident. The target would then misunderstand that the fake win was due to their own strength.

The chosen target usually has never been particularly praised until now. The fact that they were able to do well without a sure way to win would make them feel good, as if drugs being injected into them. Even the Kobold tribe which was said to be clever was not immune against this cunning malice.

For the Fish tribe, who cheated on a regular basis even against their own kinsmen, tricking these people was like snatching candy from a baby.

Then, the target would lose even if they were in perfect condition. Even though they seemed to be able to win, they somehow couldn’t win. But, the moment they think about quitting, they would win. That kind of game would continue so that the target would constantly dream of winning so that the bets continued without ending.

Nonetheless, the monthly stipend given by Nobuhide was not much. Eventually, the target's money would begin to run out, and those from the Fish tribe would then offer a big gamble.

"It's a decisive match which can turn the tables."

"If you win, would you not be able to get back what you've lost so far?"

"It's probably your turn to win by now."

The Fish tribesmen skillfully tempted the target with words and made them feel that they could win. The target would then be soundly crushed. Since victory and defeat were manipulated by the Fish tribe, it was a natural result.

When the target became unable to pay money, the Fish tribesmen would change their attitudes and surround him.

“If you don’t have money, then you can bet something else instead of money. If you don’t have anything, borrow from someone.”

The target would usually not have something to substitute for money. There was also no way that they could tell someone that they needed a loan due to gambling since their contribution to their tribe was low. Their situation could be said to be a burden, and if such a person caused trouble for someone else, it would not be strange for that person to be abandoned by their tribe.

“There are camels, right?” The Fish tribesmen don’t particularly care about anything. They could even commit taboos without blinking an eye.

Camels were divine beasts as Nobuhide, the leader of the town, loved camels. It was something unacceptable to be made as a subject of betting.

“Anyway, if you just say that the camels escaped, he probably wouldn’t mind it.” The Fish tribesmen urged.

The target would listen to their devilish whispers, and do something that cannot be undone anymore. The Fish tribesmen would then kill the camel, roast the meat and eat it. The target would also feast on the camel meat as well. By doing this, the Fish tribe would have successfully made an accomplice who would never betray them.

Thereafter, both parties would seek to gamble with the others. The taget knew that they were worthless, but they could not permit themselves to be the only unfortunate one.

Thus, the gambling spread like a ripple in a lake, and the town gradually became rotten.

However, there was also an exception - the Wolf tribe.

For the Wolf tribesmen, they were proud of being trusted by Nobuhide more than any other tribe. That pride made them have a strong heart, and they never became lazy.

After Nobuhide gave the Wolf tribe the power of upholding order, the residents who drowned in alcohol and gambling also started to work seriously. The town seemed to have regained its original shape.

But, that was just on surface. In the heart of beastmen other than the Wolf tribe, dissatisfaction was slowly being accumulated due to the power which was given to certain people.

Being ordered without impunity by the Wolf tribe who was supposed to be equal to them, it was impossible for the other beastmen to bear.

One night...

Inside the brick house built on the west side of the town, the head of every tribe except for the Wolf tribe were gathered. They were sitting in a circle with liquor and camel meat.

“Good grief, I am sick of working day after day.” The chief of the Fish tribe complained. Beside him, the chief of the Crow and Snake tribes also agreed loudly.

“.....”

There was no response from the other chiefs. Many people have become lazy, but only those old chiefs remained stalwart. However, they could not even admonish their own tribesmen because they, too, were accomplices of the Fish tribe.

The chief of the Fish tribe behaved like they had no special attachment to the town. Their terrifying, reckless behaviour has been going on since they made these old beastmen accomplices in murdering and eating the camels. This made it hard for them to go against the Fish tribe.

Therefore, the old beastmen merely watched the the Fish tribe calmly. By

doing so, the Fish tribe would not to make a move against them.

However, the Fish tribe's chief's confident remark was in vain. If Nobuhide actually ordered them to leave the town, they would definitely lower their head without any shame to prevent that. This was something the old beastmen knew of from their shallow accompliceship.

"Even so, he only gives special treatment to the Wolf tribe. What is Fujiwara-sama thinking?" The chief of the Fish tribe complained yet again.

"That's right. Why is he always treating the Wolf tribe especially well?" The Pig tribe's chief agreed.

They could not help but agree on this as they usually always see the Wolf tribe get preferential treatment. However, the Wolf tribe was the first one to settle here, so that was actually not something surprising.

“The wolf tribe also seems to be eating more delicious food, right, Gobi?” The chief of the Fish tribe looked at the only person who was not a chief in the circle.

It was Gobi of the Wolf tribe. Not everyone of the Wolf tribe was an honest person. Ill-natured wolfmen also exist.

“Ah, there is no mistake. Fujiwara-sama is always eating delicious food with old man Jiharu. I’ve stolen some food that Fujiwara-sama gave him, and it was extremely delicious.” Gobi said while stuffing his mouth with camel meat.

It was such a scene. In the present situation where food was guaranteed, the beastmen, who were extremely fond of delicious things, had tremendous interest in it.

The chief of cat tribe also began to speak. “A while ago, those who did a night raid on the human army were also treated to delicious food by Fujiwara-sama.

The taste was something that couldn’t be forgotten. Even now, those people are still talking about it. The people from the Wolf tribe were also part of that at

that time.”

It was the Wolf tribe yet again.

“We are also working hard like the Wolf tribe too. Why is there such a difference in everything?” The chief of the Fish tribe stated indignantly.

The other chiefs also agreed vehemently, and everyone began to speak of their dissatisfaction.

Certainly, while every tribe had a life that couldn’t be compared to the time here. But, after they got accustomed to it, the value of the meals that the beastmen obtained now dropped.

Desire knew no bounds. The beastmen were not satisfied with the current situation where they were living peacefully.

“To begin with, Fujiwara-sama is too naive for a human!” The chief of the Goblin tribe shouted as he slammed the sake cup onto the floor.

The beastmen, under Nobuhide’s directions, had repelled the humans. That fact made them have self-confidence that beastmen were superior to humans. For these people, who had deep resentments towards humans, to have their relationship reversed, they craved vengeance.

However, what Nobuhide did was only giving consideration to humans, such as treatment for the injured people.

“How much did we suffer before we arrived at this town!? We should get revenge on the humans by throwing them out, not by giving them food!” The chief of the Goblin tribe yelled.

Again, voices of agreement echoed throughout the house. As soon as they settled, the chief of the Fish tribe looked at each chief’s face with his round eyes, and asked.

“Why, are you all listening to what a human says?”

Human. Needless to say, it was about Nobuhide. The old chiefs stared at each other silently.

“Why, you ask..? It’s because he helped us when we were starving...” One of them replied hesitantly.

“However, was it not the humans who robbed us of everything?” The chief of the Fish tribe countered, and was met with silence. “Then, are we not qualified to get even more things? It should be an obvious right given to us.”

“Certainly...”

“That is certainly true.”

The chiefs nodded.

Nobuhide had given them food and a place to live. That was the beastmen’s viewpoint. It was definitely thanks to Nobuhide that they were able to live a much better life than most people in this continent. Even so, inside the beastmen’s hearts, a feeling of being victimized by Nobuhide was swiftly born before they even knew it.

“Even so, how does Fujiwara-sama do all these things?” The chief of the Fish tribe asked aloud.

Then, the chief of the Kobold tribe answered. “...The place where Fujiwara-sama lives is suspicious. Every time there’s something new, it always comes out from there. At first, we thought that they’re things he produced with the art of alchemy, but Fujiwara-sama does not even know of the word “ma” from magic. Perhaps there is something over there, something that produced all of the things in town.”

Nobuhide had been persistent in asking about magic from the Kobold tribe. If he could use magic, why does he not know about something which everyone knew?

“Has anyone ever climbed over the wall?” The chief of the Fish tribe asked.

Everyone shook their heads in response. Everyone was interested in the place where Nobuhide lived, but the size of the stone walls that were surrounding was on a different scale than the stone walls surrounding the town.

It was natural for them to think that he was hiding something, and become suspicious. However, they feared of being kicked out from the town if they did something to annoy him, so they did not take action.

“In other words, if we can get into that place, this town will become ours, the beastmen’s?”

The old chiefs were startled. Making the town theirs... They had never thought about it. But, they were still hesitating. This was regarding something every beastman had forcibly put in the corner of their minds, after all. Besides, they still felt indebted to Nobuhide.

“W-Wait! Fujiwara-sama has mysterious weapons. Nobody can win against that! Even if we manage to take him by surprise, he’s always surrounded by those people from the Wolf tribe. If we make one mistake, we will suffer annihilation!” The chief from the Leopard tribe tried to change their minds.

They were frightened by Nobuhide’s weapons. When they compared themselves to him, they did not have satisfactory weapons. At best, there were individuals who only owned bows and arrows, and farming tools such as hoes and plows.

Nevertheless, if they could catch him off guard, they might be able to beat Nobuhide. However, Nobuhide was more vigilant than ever now, and he was always escorted by the Wolf tribesmen.

“What? Is not there not someone from the Wolf tribe over here?” The chief of the Fish tribe looked pointedly at Gobi.

Gobi, having not listened to the story, merely grinned with cheeks red from liquor consumption.

Then the chief of the Fish tribe continued. “Also, someone from the Shugurin Dukedom contacted us. Soon, that country will come to attack this town. In that case, they would like for our Fish tribe to help.”

“Fool! Is the other side not a human as well?” One of the old chiefs spat. It was a natural reaction from the old chiefs.

However, as having anticipated that, the chief of the Fish tribe smiled widely, showing off his jagged teeth.

“That’s right. I have no intentions to ally myself with the Shugurin Dukedom.

But, when it comes to war, Fujiwara-sama will distribute weapons to protect the city. Then, we will be able to use the bows and cannons too. If we act together, we can use that chance. After we take over this town, we can then also defeat the Shugurin Dukedom.”

The old chiefs gulped audibly as their faces paled.

It was okay if they were just complaining. But, when it came to actually having to do it, they needed resolution. They need to prepare to return back to the painful lives they had before they arrived at this town.

“Interesting... My tribe will do it. To fear humans is a disgrace to beastmen.” The chief of the Crow tribe pledged.

“My tribe too. Our pride as the Snake tribe will not allow us to work under humans.” The chief of the Snake tribe followed up quickly.

Their words tickled the pride of the other beastmen.

“Ooh, brave people who aren’t afraid of humans. Now, these are true beastmen!” The words of the chief of the Fish tribe further stimulated the pride of the other beastmen.

By the way, this was arranged before the meeting. Usually, the three newcomer tribes quarrelled and tried to kick the other two out. However, because they were pursuing their own interests, they became united against a common enemy.

The chief of the Fish tribe looked at the old chiefs. His eyes were glinting, as if taunting them for being afraid of humans.

“L-let’s do it!” A trembling voice stated.

It was the Goblin tribe’s chief.

Amongst them, the Goblin and Kobold tribes had the closest associations to the humans. But, they also hate humans the most. No, it should be said that this was because they were close to humans. Because of their close relations to humans, when they were rejected, the humiliation and rage penetrated into the marrow of their very beings.

“W-We, too will.” When the Goblin tribe participated, it was impossible for the Kobold tribe to not participate. These two tribes were always opposing each other after all.

“...We will too.”

“...Us too.”

After that, peer pressure made the remaining people decide. If someone had said no, a different result might have occurred. But, it was difficult to disagree when flow has already been decided.

When everyone finally voiced their approval, the chief of the Fish tribe nodded with satisfaction.

“This is why we are beastmen. Everyone, let’s blow away Fujiwara.” He declared.

The usual honorific for Nobuhide has disappeared.

◆

It was the beginning of August, a rather hot day.

Far away south of the Kingdom of Sandra, the clear blue sky was spread over the place which some parts of the human world called the Beastmen Town.

The bright sun illuminated the world. The black barrels of the mountain cannons lined up atop the stone walls surrounding the town dimmed the reflection of the sunlight.

It was not only the cannons that were illuminated by the light on this intense day. A tremendous number of beastmen were also on the stone walls.

The Wolf and Raccoon tribes were both atop the northern stone wall. There was an artilleryman attached to the cannons, and archers lined up between each cannon.

Nobuhide Fujiwara, the head of the town, was at that place too.

Their line of sight were uniformly at the ground far away. A human army had appeared once again in this place. The enemy was setting up camp far away, and a messenger had come to the town while riding a horse.

Then, an archer pulled his bow at the messenger.

“We are of the Shugurin Dukedom! This place will become the territory of the Shugurin Dukedom! Surrender immediately!” The messenger announced loudly.

He was wearing good attire. It was different from last time since they even sent a messenger. This meant that a real army was coming to invade.

“We will accept your declaration of war and take up arms!” Nobuhide shouted loudly.

When he heard that, the messenger turned around and rode back to his own camp. The archer still had his arrowhead pointed at the back of the messenger

as he left.

Suddenly, Nobuhide looked at his right side, as if being lured that way.

For some reason. It was really something that didn’t need any attention. But, for some reason, he just had the urge to look.

Then, someone from the Wolf tribe aimed an arrow at Nobuhide.

—— And he let loose the arrow.

Chapter 053 - End of Prologue ⑤

Atop the northern stone walls, the Wolf and Raccoon tribes were split up on the right and left with the gate as the middle point.

Considering the state of the beastmen recently, even if a war occurred, Nobuhide would always be on the side of the Wolf tribe. In the worst case scenario, he was worried that the beastmen with weapons might start a rebellion.

Even though it was like that.

—— Eh?

He was surprised. It felt as if there was a hole in his heart.

At the place where Nobuhide faced, there was a wolfman aiming an arrow at him. He seemed about to release it any moment.

There was a phrase about time flowing slowly. There was probably less than a second to the wolfman releasing the arrow. But, for some reason, Nobuhide could clearly feel every grain of sand dancing in the sky.

(I need to escape from that arrow’s line of fire..!)

What controlled Nobuhide was not about the traitor being from the Wolf tribe, but how he must avoid the arrow. It was an emotion about protecting himself.

The distance was about ten meters. From the distance and the length of time he sensed, Nobuhide had an illusion that the arrow could be easily avoided.

However, regrettably, no matter how Nobuhide tried to move his body, his body remained strangely still.

(Why, why?!)

He became flustered. Whenever he thought about speeding up, his body did not responded to that command.

(Will I die here?)

Nobuhide thought desperately.

He was wearing a bulletproof vest. But, what about his face? What about his neck? Once he was seized by anxiety, he began to doubt about the reliability of the bulletproof vest.

When he became conscious of his own, impending death, the events that occurred after he had arrived in this world suddenly began to whirl around his mind like a revolving lantern. They were mostly about the time Nobuhide had spent with the beastmen.

At first, it was only for his self-interests. In order to increase the funds and the population, he accepted them. He did not trust them. It was merely a mutually beneficial relationship.

However, Nobuhide felt a sense of intimacy after living with them, especially for the Wolf tribe. He started to trust them as if they were his own family. But, the reality in front of him now denied those thoughts.

(Was it a mistake to believe in the Wolf tribe..?”

He did not know why the wolfman in front of him turned against him. However, only regret was present in Nobuhide’s heart.

And the arrow was released.

The arrows seemed to tear up the air around it as it roared and sped towards Nobuhide’s body.

At that moment...

He felt an impact from the side, and fell down without resistance.

What happened?

Nobuhide could not understand that immediately.

(That hurts...)

A dull pain ran through him as he hit the ground hard. But, there was no other pain. While only confusion remained in his mind, the other thing Nobuhide could understand was that he was safe.

Nobuhide tried to stand up instinctively as the thought of being saved came to his mind.

“Eh..?” He uttered as he gaped.

Nobuhide, whose torso was raised, spontaneously spotted the figure of a wolf tribe member who had fallen like himself.

But, what was different was an arrow stuck deeply in the side of her upper body armor. The red blood that flowed from her wound was soaking the stone walls like a grotesque painting.

“Mira!” Someone’s voice, likely from the wolf tribe, resounded.

The moment the arrow was released, Mira had thrown her body at Nobuhide, and saved him. At the expense of her body, that is.

“Fu-Fujiwara-sama!” Jiharu raised his voice as he ran towards Nobuhide.

At the same time, the surrounding people began to move. On the other hand, the criminal who fired the arrow panicked.

“YOU BASTARD! GOBI!” The criminal, Gobi, was being surrounded and held down immediately.

In the meantime, Nobuhide was able to stand up after being helped up by Jiharu despite his hazy consciousness.

It was a betrayal by the Wolf tribe, or at least, that was what he thought. However, he was saved by the same Wolf tribe. Even Jiharu's voice and expression just now were clearly those of worry.

"So this is not a betrayal by the wolf tribe, huh..?" Nobuhide muttered.

Then, Gobi, who was pressed to the ground, recovered his sanity and his expression became clear.

It's not my fault. It was such a face.

Furthermore Gobi roared.

“NOW IS THE TIME TO REGAIN THE PRIDE OF THE BEASTMEN! LET’S DEFEAT FUJIWARA — THE HUMAN, AND MAKE THIS PLACE OUR UTOPIA!”

Killing Nobuhide would make the town truly belong to the beastmen. The words that Gobi spoke were words of betrayal.

But, the response of other Wolf tribesmen were unfavourable. In Nobuhide eyes, everyone seemed dumbfounded by that declaration.

Suddenly, the gong above the north gate sounded loudly. When Nobuhide looked to see what happened, it turned out that the one sounding the gong was the one of the Racoon tribesmen.

The Raccoon tribe pointed their weapons at the Wolf tribe with hostility. No, they were aiming their hostility at Nobuhide.

Nobuhide finally understood. The gong was the signal of the start of the rebellion. Only the Wolf tribe was not aware of that.

“What the hell is this?! What do you intend to do?!” Jiharu shouted at the Raccoon tribe.

Then, the Raccoon tribe’s chief stepped forward.

“Jiharu. Everyone except for the Wolf tribe is on this side. Now then, hand over Fujiwara... Hand over that human.” The Raccoon tribe’s chief paused. “You know what? We will arrange for his life to be spared. Unlike the Fish tribe and the others, we have a merciful heart.”

Jiharu and the chief of the Raccoon tribe were facing each other, and Nobuhide could see the face of the Raccoon tribe’s chief clearly.

Nobuhide remembered when the twin camel babies were born. They had

cried and laughed together. Yet, what was in front of him now was the chief of the Raccoon tribe who only harbored hostility in his eyes.

The chief of the Raccoon tribe continued his demands with a sneer.

“Now, hurry up. All the cannons are being aimed here now. Even if you stay on the side of humans, you will not be able to win.”

As if to prove the truth of his words, loud voices echoed from their surroundings.

“DEFEAT THE HUMAN! THE TOWN BELONGS TO BEASTMEN!”

“DEFEAT THE HUMAN! THE TOWN BELONGS TO BEASTMEN!”

“DEFEAT THE HUMAN! THE TOWN BELONGS TO BEASTMEN!”

[TL: this is the best. I like to translate repeating chant, all I need is copy and paste]

A chorus resounded. The loud chants of the beastmen came from east and west of the stone walls.

The same also happened from under the stone walls. The Goblin tribe who was entrusted with supplies also screamed to bring down Nobuhide.

They were really surrounded by enemies. Even Nobuhide understood with his dazed head.

Then Jiharu looked back toward Gobi, before turning his attention to Nobuhide. Nobuhide does not understand what was reflected in his eyes anymore.

(What were all the things I have done for until now?)

From within Nobuhide’s chest was an intense ache. There was no power inside his body, and he simply froze on the spot.

The sound of a rough breath reached Nobuhide’s ears. It belonged to Mira, who had protected him.

Nobuhide approached Mira while staggering. She seemed to be trying to cling onto something.

(Why did she help me?)

He thought that she hated humans. He thought that he was hated by her. But, she had sacrificed herself to save him.

Why?

Nobuhide couldn’t find the answer, and more questions arose in his mind instead.

Mira’s palm was still warm. There might still be a way to save her.

At that moment.

“WE ARE WITH FUJIWARA-SAMA!” Chief Jiharu declared loudly.

Nobuhide’s eyes widened and and turned to look at the him. He could see the back of Chief Jiharu’s who was pointing his spear at the Raccoon tribe’s chief.

Even though he always complained that he was old, his back was sturdier than anyone else's.

Following Chief Jiharu, the other wolfmen also raised their voices in support of their chief.

"WE ARE WITH FUJIWARA-SAMA!"

"WE WILL FIGHT WITH FUJIWARA-SAMA!"

They became louder and louder, penetrating to the marrow of Nobuhide's bones.

That was not all. At that time, Mira, whose hand was being held by Nobuhide, squeezed back a little.

It was very weak. But, it was powerful feeling for Nobuhide.

(Not yet.)

Nobuhide thought.

It was not over yet. Mira’s hand was so warm.

(We are still alive. I still have my companions. I should do what I can do.)

A strange power gushed forth from inside his body. He overflowed with energy.

“EVERYONE, JUST FOR A WHILE! PLEASE PROTECT ME!” Nobuhide cried out and summoned [Town Data].

The wolf tribesmen surrounded him swiftly to protect him. Then, Nobuhide used his ability in public for the first time.

◆

When the gong signalling the start of the rebellion sounded from the north, the beastmen on the stone walls in the east and west gathered to the north, leaving only the artillerymen behind.

Presently, the chief of the Deer tribe was managing the artillerymen on the eastern stone walls. He was still young, only a little bit over 30 years old.

He constantly won prizes at the competition that was held every year, and

finally, he defeated the person from the Leopard tribe, and took first for the short distance race this year. He was related to the previous chief, and with his achievement in that competition, he became a chief while still young.

“The alteration of the target has been completed!” The artillerymen reported.

The young chief merely gave a satisfied sound of agreement in response.

At this time, all the cannons were aimed at the north gate. Of course, they didn’t have any intentions to fire the cannons just like that. If they fired the cannons, they might be able to subjugate Nobuhide easily, but at the cost of serious damage to the northern walls. If the northern walls collapse, the battle with the Shugurin Dukedom would be tough.

After all, they did not have any intentions of being ruled by the Shugurin Dukedom. If they lost, then the ruler of this town would only be changed from Nobuhide to the Shugurin Dukedom.

The plan for the rebellion was proposed by the Fish tribe. First, Gobi from the Wolf tribe will attempt to assassinate Nobuhide. If that fails, all the beastmen will surrounded Nobuhide and prompt him to surrender. When Nobuhide refuses to surrender and has taken up arms, they will use the cannons as the last resort after the rest of the beastmen escape from the northern stone walls.

“It would be good if things go smoothly...” The young chief muttered while looking towards the north.

The gong rang. That meant that the assassination had failed. If Nobuhide resisted till the very end, many people will have be sacrificed.

(As expected, I should have prevented this...)

A thought suddenly appeared at the corner of the young chief’s mind.

He felt gratitude towards Nobuhide even if he does not have good relations

like the Wolf tribe.

(To regret when it has already reached this state...)

The young chief shook his head lightly to disperse the thought.

He had agreed with the rebellion due to following the momentum of the other older chiefs. Even if he was called weak-willed, it couldn’t be helped.

However, he couldn’t turn back anymore. The cards have already been shown. There was nothing to left to regret at this point.

The young chief grasps the pendant hanging down his chest. It was the honor he obtained when he took first place.

The young chief could keep his heart calm when he grasped the pendant. It was because that pendant was his pride; it made him confident.

Then...

Suddenly, the young chief felt something unusual from the other hand that was not grasping at his pendant.

The weight of the spear which he was holding disappeared, and in exchange, he felt something muddy take its place. He also saw an abnormality from the edge of his sight.

The young chief immediately turned his eyes to his right hand.

“W-What is this?!” He exclaimed in astonishment.

Somehow, the short spear in his hand had turned into mud.

“Uwaa! My spear!”

“The... The bow disappeared!”

Voices of surprise could also be heard from the surroundings. As he turned to see what had happened to the rest, the artillerymen also panicked.

“Don’t tell me... All the weapons..?!” The young chief gasped.

As the short spear, which had turned into mud, fell to ground, it disappeared as if it was absorbed. However, this was not the only abnormality.

“C-Chief! The cannons!”

“What!?”

Hearing an artilleryman scream, the young chief turned his eyes towards the cannons.

“Im... Impossible... “ Those words unconsciously escaped from his lips.

The lower part of the mountain cannons started to turn into mud and sink into the stone walls.

(What on earth is this?! What’s going on?!)

The young chief was bewildered. It was something beyond his understanding.

But, what he was certain was that the things that would be the key to making the rebellion a success and to oppose the humans was about to disappear now.

“W-What should we do..?!” The young chief panicked.

But, the abnormalities occurring were not done yet. This time, a dreadful sound could be heard near his feet.

“What is it this time?!” The unforeseen circumstances that happened one after another made the young chief shout in frustration.

Then, he saw the next abnormality occurring near his feet.

However, as the sound echoed, it seemed like there was nothing happening to the stone walls at first glance.

“C-CHieeffff!!” A violent scream echoed.

The young chief raised his face and clearly recognized the abnormality this time.

“No way... Impossible, there is no way!” His surprise was on a different level than the previous one.

However, that was natural because the scenery in front of him was shifting downwards step by step.

“Don’t tell me... Will the stone walls sink too..?!” His line of sight

continued to drop slowly.

The stone walls where he stood at started sinking as they turned into mud starting at the bottom.

“Aah...” He moaned. He can’t do anything any longer.

When the stone walls surrounding the town disappeared, it would spell the end of the town.

The young chief who understood this crumbled powerlessly and kneeled on the spot.

The voices of the artillerymen calling for instructions could be heard. However, the young chief could only grasp at the pendant at his chest while feeling lost.

Chapter 054 - End of Prologue ⑥

In case of an emergency, those who lived outside of the town could be evacuated inside the stone walls.

It was also like that this time. In the 15th district where no one lived, the Fish tribe and other newcomer beastmen were crammed inside.

There was not enough housing for 1,000 people, so tents were erected alongside the road to block the sun for the people who couldn't live in houses.

But, there was only one house where it was less crowded. It was also the biggest house in the district.

In the innermost room of that mansion, the chiefs of the Fish, Crow, and Snake tribes gathered, and were sharing a drink.

"Please, have another cup."

"Oh, I'm sorry for the trouble."

The Snake tribe's chief poured the liquor for the chief of the Fish tribe, who received it gladly.

The success of the rebellion, with the Fish tribe as the central figures, was imminent.

Therefore, in order to acquire some of the leftovers from the Fish tribe, the Snake and Crow tribe's chiefs flattered him while smiling ingratiatingly.

Then, the sound of a gong resounded outside of the house.

The Fish tribe's chief clicked his tongue silently.

The gong was the signal for the beastmen to rebel simultaneously, which meant that Gobi's assassination attempt on Nobuhide had failed.

"Chief of the Fish tr-" The Snake tribe's chief seemed worried as he looked at the Fish tribe's chief.

The chief of the Fish tribe reined in his frustration and dissatisfaction. He emptied the liquor in the cup as if nothing had happened, and placed the empty cup onto the floor.

"It's just a minor failure on Gobi's part. Hey! Someone come in!"

"Yes!" A youth from the Fish tribe opened the sliding doors.

"Let the others prepare! We will also join the fight!" The chief of the Fish tribe ordered.

Although they only had farming tools as weapons, they still had no choice but to participate. Since Gobi had failed to assassinated Nobuhide, their level of participation in the rebellion now involved the tribes' dignity.

Who will become the leader and manage the town? Currently, it was decided that the initiator of this operation would. Furthermore, the Fish tribe was the

largest tribe, granting them an advantage in the power struggle amongst the beastmen. However, they still can't be careless.

Anyway, the senior beastmen could operate the cannons. This was an advantage enough to overturn the difference in numbers between the tribes.

Furthermore, the reason why the chief of the Fish tribe could control these older beastmen until now was because he used the law of this town - Nobuhide.

When Nobuhide disappears, there would be no meaning in using the rule of being allowed to eat camels or not. There would also be no more need for the gambling debts to be returned.

Thus, what the Fish tribe needed to do now was to stay one step ahead of the other beastmen.

"What about the two of you? Will you make a move too?" He turned to the other two chiefs.

"Y-Yes."

"We will go."

In response to the subtle pressuring of Fish tribe's chief, the chiefs of the Crow and Snake tribes left the mansion hurriedly.

The Fish tribe's chief, who was now alone, poured more liquor into the cup, and waited for his tribesmen to finish preparing for battle.

Suddenly, something happened.

“What?!” He exclaimed as he heard an eerie sound emanating from outside.

It was heavy and low, an unfamiliar sound.

For a moment, he thought that it was the sound of the cannons, but he immediately rejected that idea since it sounded different from the cannons, which he had heard once before.

Cannons could only be fired once. On the other hand, the sound he was hearing now was uninterrupted and constant.

Nothing come into mind regarding the source of the sound. He could only guess that something unexpected had happened.

He raised his voice, demanding to know what was happening, but no one replied because they were still preparing for battle.

“Useless..." The chief of the Fish tribe grumbled.

He stood up to confirm the identity of the sound himself.

At the same time, a low and heavy sound could be heard from the floor, near his legs. However, that was not the only thing surprising thing.

“Th... This..! The floor is sinking!?” As he yelled, the floor turned into mud, and he fell backwards as his legs were swallowed by the wet earth.

Before long, the mud disappeared as if it was swallowed up by the earth, releasing his legs.

“Wh... What is this...” He muttered dazedly while the sound continued to echo in the surroundings.

While he was stunned and confused, the Fish tribe’s chief came to realize that there was strange change to the walls.

A groan escaped from his mouth when he saw that the walls were sinking. It was not just the walls that were sinking; the house itself was also sinking. When he craned his neck, he could see the ceiling slowly closing in onto him.

“Damn it! What is happening to this house?!” He snarled as he stood up and ran towards the entrance.

He did not have time to think about the reason for the current abnormalities. It was simply the danger of being crushed that made his body move.

The chief of the Fish tribe managed to somehow escape the house. On his way out, he bumped his head against a beam, but there was no pain since the place he hit turn into mud immediately anyway.

His body was safe and sound, but, it was hard to say if his sanity was as what was being reflected in his eyes when he exited was a scene that he could not have imagined.

“Wh... What is this...” He gaped.

What he saw after escaping was, by no means, a threat that couldn’t be natural. Similarly, the other fishmen outside also became dumbfounded as they stared at the situation unfolding before their eyes.

“Impossible...” One of them gasped.

There were countless houses sinking, and it was not only limited to the houses. Far beyond the sight of the chief of the Fish tribe, the stone walls surrounding the town were also sinking.

The town was sinking. It was a sight just like the end of the world.

The Fish tribe chief only remained stunned for a while before looking around.

Inside the town, the houses in this district and the shopping street in the center of town had disappeared completely. However, the rest of the houses were still there.

“What does this mean..?” He started to ponder.

There was also one more thing he noticed at the main street in the center of town - a lump of mud was rising at the end of the street.

He decided to investigate, and gathered the tribesmen nearby before heading there.

Mud had risen up from the both left and right sides of the main street. It was happening along the street, and the mud was already reaching half the height of normal people.

What's special about this mud was that it was very hard, contrary to its appearance.

The Fish tribe's chief remember the beam he hit, which had turned into mud, and disappeared into the floor. It was very soft, exactly the same as real mud.

However, the mud in front of him was very different from the mud before. It seemed to be shaping itself into something.

What on earth was happening at the both ends of the road? It was as if it was trying to block someone from using the road.

He looked toward the northern stone walls. The wolf tribesmen were descending via stairs as the stone walls slowly sank.

When he looked closer, he noticed that Nobuhide was with them.

"Could it be..?" He muttered.

Was this mud a way for Nobuhide to safely escape to his home instead of the stone walls surrounding the town? The chief of the Fish tribe wondered.

"Impossible! There is no way-!" He shook his head.

If so, then the abnormality in the town was something Nobuhide caused, as if this town itself was being shaped freely by Nobuhide's hands.

It was exactly like the work of God.

◆

Various abnormalities occurred throughout the town. Of course, this was because Nobuhide was performing[Sale] and [Purchase] with his ability.

He first sold all the [Mountain Cannons] and [Grenades] since he felt that those were the greatest threats to himself. Next, he sold individual weapons such as [Bows] and [Short spears] of all the beastmen except for the Wolf tribe.

He also tried to sell the armor, but since he already transferred ownership of the armor to the beastmen, he couldn't sell them.

When their weapons disappeared, the beastmen panicked, especially the Raccoon tribe, who was facing off against the Wolf tribe.

It was natural for them to panic since their own weapons suddenly turned into mud while their opponents still had their weapons.

But, their shock merely continued to grow.

After Nobuhide sold all the weapon-related items, he continued to sell the whole town. Selling the whole town was aimed to make the rebelling beastmen fall into confusion and lose their fighting spirit.

Nobuhide did not have any attachment to this town because he could make another ten such towns if he so wished with the current amount of [Funds] he

had.

The only thing in his mind now was how to survive this ordeal together with the Wolf tribe.

The stone walls that surrounded the town, and houses and facilities inside the town... Nobuhide sold all of them.

However, regarding the houses, since ownership had been transferred like the armor, he could only sell part of them.

Lastly, Nobuhide also purchased a new kind of stone wall.

It was to enclose and isolate the road from north gate to the place where Nobuhide lived, as well as the residential area where the Wolf tribe lived.

“Alright! People of the Wolf tribe, head to the location of the car now! Protect me with your lives! If I die, everything will be lost!” Nobuhide ordered urgently.

It was not too much to ask for them to protect him using their lives since it was a fact that if Nobuhide died, the Wolf tribe could come to an end too.

Thus, he didn’t mince his words, and merely emphasized that fact and conveyed it to them.

The Wolf tribesmen merely cried out as their morale rose.

With the exception of the Wolf tribe, weapons of the other beastmen have disappeared. The results of the abnormalities happening in the town right now, had clearly shown the fact that this was due to Nobuhide’s power.

“Fu-Fujiwara-sama!” He heard an imploring plea from Raccoon tribe’s chief.

However, upon thinking about their betrayal, he does not have any words to reply with. But, Nobuhide clearly understood that it was a cry for mercy.

However, the words of the chief of the Raccoon tribe chief words no longer had any effect on Nobuhide.

“Bring Mira there! I will absolutely not let her die!” Without even a glance at the Raccoon tribe, Nobuhide ordered the wolfmen, and they began to move.

Then, a terrified shriek echoed.

Gobi had dropped from the stone walls to the outside of the town by his kinsmen’s own hands. After witnessing Nobuhide’s God-like powers, even if he was from the same tribe, there could be no mercy.

The Wolf tribe descended from the stairs while surrounding Nobuhide as wolfmen at the back held onto their spears to keep the Raccoon tribe in check.

As Nobuhide descended from the stone walls, he saw the Goblin tribe. They had retreated far away without needing the Wolf tribe threatening them with spears as they knew that their rebellion had failed upon seeing the abnormalities in the town.

“Fu-Fujiwara-sama...” Like the Raccoon tribe, the Goblin tribe also began to beg.

However, Nobuhide ignored them. Other than the Wolf tribe, Nobuhide had already forsaken the others.

Now, what he needed to prioritize was the Wolf tribe, who would never betray him, and his own life.

“Put Mira over here! As for the others, split up and get aboard! As soon as everyone is aboard, my vehicle will lead the way!” Nobuhide announced.

Behind the north gate, other than the armored car which Nobuhide used, there were three more trucks packed with supplies. It was enough to hold all the wolf tribesmen.

“Wait, Fujiwara-sama! No, Savior-sama!” A voice could be heard from one side of the mud walls that extended from the north gate to Nobuhide’s home. It belonged to the Fish tribe’s chief, who had climbed the raising mud walls.

“Everything is the plan of those senior beastmen! We, the newcomers, are not involved in it! Please, save us!” The chief of the Fish tribe grovelled.

This startled not only the Goblin tribe, but also the Raccoon tribe who were descending from the stone walls as well as the beastmen on the eastern and western stone walls.

It seemed like the Fish tribe intended to put all the blame on the senior beastmen instead.

This was definitely the definition of the phrase “If you betray someone once, you will betray yet again.”

“You bastard! Don’t lie! Everything was planned by you, the Fish tribe!”

“That’s right! To take advantage of the Shugurin Dukedom that’s planning to attack the town, you guys from the Fish tribe persuaded us to rebel!”

The chiefs of the Goblin and Raccoon tribes refuted.

But, as if he had already memorized it, the Fish tribe chief lied without even blinking an eye.

“That’s absurd! What can we newcomers do? We don’t even have weapons! Stop telling unsightly lies at a time like this!”

Shameless.

Shamelessness was so ingrained in the Fish tribe’s nature that they could tell a lie as if it was the truth.

But, the Fish tribe’s chief overdid it.

“What did you say!?” One of the raccoonmen on the top of the stone walls used one of the few remaining bows to shoot the Fish tribe’s chief.

The arrow pierced into his shoulder, he let out a pained cry as he fell onto the other side of street.

Nobuhide was watching all of this from the driver’s seat.

It was disgusting. Not just one of them, but the both of them.

“Fujiwara-sama, everyone is on board!” He received a report through the transceiver.

“Fujiwara-sama! We were wrong! Please don’t abandon us!” The Goblin tribe begged as they prostrated themselves onto the ground.

“Fujiwara-sama!”

“Fujiwara-sama!”

The Raccoon tribe and other beastmen also began their appeals while descending from the stone walls.

At that moment, the other Fish tribesmen started climbing up the mud walls again. One of them tried to jump on top of the vehicles.

However, an arrow flew there swiftly, shot by the Raccoon tribesmen once again.

“Fujiwara-sama, we’ve killed the hateful Fish tribe! We’re on Fujiwara-sama’s side too!” A Raccoon tribesman shouted loudly.

However, Nobuhide merely switched gears, stepped on the accelerator, and took off.

Then, Nobuhide used his ability while gripping onto the steering wheel. At the place where the car once was, mud rose and blocked off the road’s entrance.

Chapter 055 - End of Prologue ⑦

Mud rose from both ends of the town's main street.

Meanwhile, with the armored vehicle in the lead, the vehicles lined up as they advanced south. After a short distance, about 500 meters or so, the vehicles arrived in front of Nobuhide's house.

The mud wall on their left had a path leading towards the Wolf tribe's residential area.

"Everyone, get off!" Nobuhide ordered using the transceiver.

After he got off as well, he looked back at the road they had just used.

There wasn't much height to the [stone walls] he [purchased] to replace the mud behind the north gate. Beyond those gradually forming walls, he could see

beastmen heading over.

But, that didn’t matter.

Nobuhide had purchased [walls] along the road to his house. Furthermore, he had [purchased] a [moat] just outside of his house. With the walls as a barrier and a deep moat, it would take some time for them to arrive.

“Archers, defend this place with the [moat] as a shield! Chief Jiharu will take command!” He instructed.

He did not say “shoot the enemy” because he still had a little mercy left toward the beastmen who rebelled.

The wolfmen lined up behind the [moat] with their bows readied while yelling their affirmation.

Next, Nobuhide [purchased] some [arrow shields] and installed them in front of the moat.

“The remaining people will take this road! This road leads to the Wolf tribe’s residential area! Evacuate everyone to my house! Listen, the only important thing right now is to evacuate everyone! Prioritize speed!”

Under Nobuhide’s orders, the truck headed towards their destination quickly.

By now, the mud that surrounding the roads had turned into stone walls about 5 meters in height. More mud was raised into a [wall] atop the stone walls, further raising the difficulty of getting across it. Thus, the only thing to be vigilant of now were the ones that had already gotten past the walls - the beastmen from the northern main street.

Nobuhide got into the armored car with the remaining Wolf tribesmen and entered the gate to his home.

However, there's only a single house and Catherine inside. Because of that, the wolfmen, who had entered nervously, seemed disappointed.

After that, they carried out treatment for Mira, who was lying in the back seat of the armored car.

Nobuhide [purchased] a [Medical Kit]. One of the tribesmen accustomed to helping with medical treatments pulled out the arrow that had pierced Mira, and sterilized and sewed the wound shut. When that process was over, Nobuhide administered antibiotics on Mira himself.

This was the best Nobuhide could do for now.

If her internal organs were injured by the arrow, Mira couldn’t be saved. Even with treatment from the modern era, it would be difficult to escape death.

Nobuhide clenched his fists as he bit his lips at his own powerlessness.

He wanted to be able to help somehow, but there was nothing an amateur like him could do beyond this.

Nobuhide got off the armored car, leaving Mira and the wolfman, who was treating her, in the back seat. Then, he posted various members of the Wolf tribe as lookouts at the watchtower atop the stone wall.

He also [purchased] 7 type 73 heavy duty trucks. After that, there were 10 trucks in total. With this number, everyone from the Wolf tribe would be able to get on board.

“I’ve done everything I can.” Nobuhide muttered to himself.

After that, he thought about the things he should do for the future. However,

it had already been decided - to abandon the town and make another one at a different place again.

That was why he had bought all these trucks. But the problem was where should they go to?

The desert would be impossible. The environment was too severe for people to live. If he used his ability again, it would be possible for them to live there. But, if he died, the Wolf tribe won’t be able to sustain themselves.

Then, how about the other side of the desert? However, that’s also no good.

He doesn't know how far the desert stretched in the first place. Assuming there’s an end to the desert, what would be beyond it? There were plenty of things he didn’t know. Going through the desert without a map would be like sailing the sea without a destination. It would be far too dangerous.

Then, maybe they could rebuild the town again around this area, but with only the Wolf tribe allowed in there?

For example, about 40 km south was the POW prison. With that as the base, a new town could be built.

But, Nobuhide also rejected this choice.

If they stayed around this area, they might be found eventually, not by any human nations, but by the beastmen who had betrayed him today.

Nobuhide didn’t want to see the traitors’ faces anymore.

The days when he lived with them flickered through his mind. He felt so much pain, as if his heart was breaking.

Where should they head to then? The answer would be the far north.

Sometime ago, he heard about the Dryad Kingdom there. He heard that there were a lot of untouched land there, and it was said that as long as you had the money, there would land for you to buy.

He could create a town in that area and accumulate power. He could start over once again, together with the Wolf tribe who had followed him till the end.

But, to achieve that purpose, there were things that had to be done.

“Catherine.” Nobuhide called out.

She stood up proudly, and stared at Nobuhide with her round eyes.

Nobuhide approached her, and gently stroked her cheek.

“You’re smart. You should understand what I’m about to say.”

Listening to Nobuhide’s words, Catherine let out a soft cry.

She was very smart. She had always understood what Nobuhide said to her.

“We will be going north. So, this will be farewell.” Nobuhide sighed.

There were no camels in the north. Bringing Catherine would be for his own ego.

She had a place where she belonged. Building a family, giving birth to children, and having her own life...

Nobuhide thought that that would be the happiest thing for Catherine.

“Listen. You will be killed if you stay here. So, go to the south.” He instructed seriously.

If Nobuhide disappeared, this land would become lawless once more, and the camels’ lives would be at stake. Even now, Nobuhide guessed that the reason why the number of camels decreased was because the beastmen killed and ate them.

“It’s been fun being with you. Thank you.” Nobuhide brought his cheek to Catherine’s big face.

Catherine’s smell, her body temperature that's being transmitted to him...

These were things he would never experience again.

Nobuhide continued to gently stroke Catherine’s neck.

(At least until we separate...)

Eventually, the trucks that went to the Wolf tribe’s residential area came back, and the people who couldn't get in came back by foot. The camels that the Wolf tribe kept also arrived at the same time.

“Fujiwara-sama! The Fish tribe has taken a roundabout path to the south!” A voice rang out from the watchtower.

There's no more time.

Nobuhide opened the back gate.

“Now, go.” Nobuhide hit Catherine’s body lightly.

Catherine looked at Nobuhide. With a cry towards the sky, she ran towards the back gate. Behind her, the camels reared by the Wolf tribe followed her lead.

Nobuhide looked at the backs of the small flock as they galloped away. The figure of Catherine’s body was hidden by the sand thrown up by their galloping, and the bodies of the other camels. But, Nobuhide could still firmly grasp Catherine’s figure in his mind.

Then, following after them, dozens of camels came from the left and right, and the small flock quickly became a large herd. Those were the camels reared by the other tribes in town.

Since the stone walls of the town had already been sold, there was nothing keeping the camels enclosed anymore. Catherine's loud cry also seemed to have reached the other camels, causing them to heed her call.

"This is fine... This is fine...." Nobuhide muttered to himself.

(Catherine is in the front of that flock. She will live on with her friends. So this is fine...)

"Be happy." Nobuhide's eyes became red.

But he didn't shed any tears because there were other things he needed to do.

As the camels left the town, the back gate closed again with a heavy thud.

“Call Jiharu and everyone else here!” He called for Jiharu, who was confronting the traitorous beastmen at the moat.

Then, Nobuhide and the Wolf tribe gathered in the spacious 100 meter square area of his home that’s surrounded by 20 meter tall stone walls.

However, the wolf tribesmen were confused. The wolfmen, who were inside their residential area, were already aware of the attempted rebellion.

But, why did they need to let the camels go?

The Wolf tribe did not know that Nobuhide was planning to abandon the town. They thought that he would simply barricade himself here.

“Then, let us go too! Everyone, board the truck!” Nobuhide ordered.

“Eh..? Aren’t we going to barricade ourselves here and protect the town..?” It was Jiharu who asked the question.

Like the other wolf tribesmen, Jiharu also thought that they would barricade themselves here.

“We will leave this town! We are heading towards the far north!” Nobuhide declared.

At Nobuhide’s announcement, shock could be seen on everyone’s faces.

“Unthinkable, abandoning the town..!”

Such mumbles could be heard amongst everyone gathered.

At that, Nobuhide used his ability to make a town.

Several mud walls raised up before the wolfmen, and instantly transformed into various shapes.

What appeared were ears of wheat, vegetables, chopsticks, tablewares, and chairs.

“Do you understand now? Since there's not enough time, I didn’t make anything too big. The houses, wells, and everything in this town were made by me. As long as I want to, I can create a town anywhere.” He explained quickly. “Is there any reason to remain in this place? There are only enemies around us. Thus, I’ve decided that it would be better to build another town again at a different place. Since I can build one easily, there's no meaning in protecting this place.”

Those who saw the miracle for the first time, and those who saw the miracle once again. Neither party could refute Nobuhide's words.

The Wolf tribe quickly boarded the trucks. While doing so, the front gate and the back gate were beginning to groan from the blows of the other beastmen.

Various voices could be heard from outside the gates, including voices of repentance and the voices pushing the blame onto the other races.

"Alright, let's go!" When everyone had boarded the trucks, Nobuhide gestured with his hand, and turned the back gate into mud.

The Fish tribe rushed in immediately, but with a single car horn, they scattered in all directions.

With Nobuhide’s armored car in the lead, eleven vehicles rushed out from the back gate. Then, Nobuhide finally [sold] his own home.

The cars headed north through the rough terrain, leaving the town behind in the distance.

“Aaah... The town...” The Wolf tribe members at the back seat of the trucks grieved as they looked at the town shrinking in the distance.

The huge stone wall exceeding 20 meters was the symbol of the town. The Wolf tribe was only able to go to the the town and live there after they saw the stone walls from a distance.

Now, the walls slowly sank down and disappeared, as if they had never existed in the first place.

For the Wolf tribe, the town was supposed to be the land where they could

live in peace. They spent 6 years without any worries of starving or any threat of enemies. Without anyone dying from unnatural causes while the number of children steadily increased, the tribe felt nothing but joy. They were happy there, and everyone from the Wolf tribe thought of the place as their hometown.

That's why they can't help but feel their hearts tighten at the sight of the town being destroyed like this.

◆

Under the scorching sunlight, eleven cars travelled towards the north. The vehicles don't encounter the Shugurin Dukedom's army as they took a long detour to the west, and proceeded from there.

On the way, from his armored car at the front, Nobuhide spotted a cloud of sand.

It was the army of the Shugurin Dukedom. They were advancing from their camp to attack the town.

Now that he saw them, Nobuhide suddenly remembered the beastmen's words. The Raccoon tribe's chief was talking about starting the rebellion when the Shugurin Dukedom army attacked.

(After this, what will happen to the beastmen left in the town..?)

Pain pricked at Nobuhide's heart.

(Since they said that they had secret communications with the Shugurin Dukedom, they wouldn't be treated badly, right?)

Nobuhide thought before shaking his head.

(No, there was no such thing. If the humans were that kind, they wouldn’t have taken the beastmen’s land in the first place.)

The beastmen who rebelled were probably thinking of fighting against the Shugurin Dukedom after they obtained the town. But now, there were no weapons for the beastmen to use to fight off the humans. They would need to beg for mercy from the humans, be forced to lead a bitter life.

Nobuhide thought that that was what they deserved. However, at the same time, he felt unbearable pain at the thought that the misfortune would extend to their children.

(The children have no sin...)

But, Nobuhide shook off that thought, and stepped on the accelerator. He can’t turn back anymore.

“Fujiwara-sama.” A voice called out from the back seat after a few minutes.

“What is it?” He questioned.

“There's no change in Mira’s condition. Her internal organs have probably been injured.” The voice quivered.

Nobuhide gritted his teeth.

At this rate, Mira will eventually die.

Even in modern day Japan, it was difficult to treat the wounds of internal organs.

However, there's one a way to cure it - the existence of magic in this world, which wasn’t available in modern Japan.

(If it’s healing magic, then Mira might be saved.)

Nobuhide tightened his grip on the steering wheel.

(Should I turn back, attack Shugurin Dukedom’s army, and capture a user of healing magic?)

With this armored car, even if the enemy’s army was large, they still wouldn’t be able to capture him. Even without using the armored car, he could still [purchase] a new cannon and attack them with it.

(But, will they really comply?)

Nobuhide wondered.

Thinking back to the rebellion, Nobuhide had already been scared by Gobi, one of the wolf tribesmen. He did not realize that just the measly power of one person could be a threat to his life.

For example, what might happen if those who surrendered were only pretending to do so? It would be selfish to sacrifice the others for his own goals.

It was hard for Nobuhide to make a decision. His foot stayed on the accelerator as he continued to think.

When the Shugurin Dukedom’s army couldn’t be seen anymore, Nobuhide changed course along the river. There, he could see the shadow of an army across the northern river.

(Are those the reinforcements of Shugurin Dukedom? If that's the case, why are they setting up camp here?)

Nobuhide turned the steering wheel to make another detour to the west again.

But, a horseman rushed out and approached him swiftly.

Looking at their appearance, Nobuhide felt as if he had seen them somewhere.

"Oiii, Stop~!" The horseman yelled.

Golden hair, a feminine body, and a high voice particular to a female... When Nobuhide looked through the binoculars, he immediately knew who the person was.

It was Mireille from the Red Dragon Knight Order.

“HALT!” As Nobuhide ordered through the transceiver, he was filled with hope.

The line of vehicles slowed down and eventually stopped.

“Princess Mireille!” Nobuhide jumped out of the driver’s seat.

This Mireille, unlike her former, thin self, was full of life.

“As I thought, it’s Fujiwara-dono.” Mireille smiled widely.

Looking at her friendliness, Nobuhide judged that they didn't come to wage war on the town. He wanted to know why she was here, but it was not the right time for that.

"Is there anyone who can use healing magic in your army?" He questioned.

"Indeed there is." Mireille nodded.

"Mira has a serious injury! Please, help her!" Nobuhide pleaded.

"What!?" The princess exclaimed.

Nobuhide remembered that Mira had taken care of Mireille before she returned to the Kingdom of Sandra. At that time, he realized that the relationship between Mira and Mireille was not shallow. That's why he knew

that she would definitely save Mira the moment he saw her.

“Understood! Wait a moment!” Without asking about their circumstances, Mireille quickly returned to her camp.

(Looks like Mira can be saved!)

Nobuhide clenched his fist.

“Let’s take a break here. But, don’t let your guard down. If you don’t have any business, do not get off.” Nobuhide ordered through the transceiver, and waited for Mireille’s return.

Before long, Mireille came back with someone who could use healing magic. Nobuhide brought both of them to Mira, who was still in the back seat.

Then, Nobuhide and the wolf tribesmen watched Mireille and the healer vigilantly from outside of the car.

The healer looked over Mira's injury. A faint light shone when his hand touched the wound that had been sewn up.

"How is it? Can she be healed!?" Mireille demanded.

"Yes. It will take time, but her life can be saved." The healer replied calmly.

Saved.

Upon hearing that word, Nobuhide's body just about lost all its strength from the sheer amount of relief he felt.

(That's good.)

Nobuhide looked at Mireille.

Mireille was talking to the unconscious Mira. Her face looked very gentle.

Since things were already fine, Nobuhide left that place.

Then, after another hour...

After the healer finished treating Mira, he left while being accompanied by Mireille.

(Time sure flew by slowly.)

Nobuhide leaned on the vehicle's body and stared into the blue sky.

In this one hour, Mira’s condition was stabilized, and there's no need to worry for her life anymore.

“When Mira’s wakes up, I need to thank her.” Nobuhide muttered with a slight smile.

The good news continued.

“Fujiwara-sama! Something is heading toward us!” A wolfman reported.

“What!?” Nobuhide glanced around.

His eyesight was worse than the wolfmen, so he had to look through the binoculars to the place the wolfman had pointed at.

A thin cloud of sand was gradually approaching.

Before long, the figure was clearly reflected through the lens of the binoculars.

(Could it be..?)

Nobuhide stared.

“Ca-Catherine...” He was surprised at first, and murmured her name

unconsciously. “Catherine..!”

The second time, his voice was full of emotions.

“Catheriiiiinee!!”

The third time, his voice was projected loudly from the bottom of his heart.

Then, a loud cry resounded from far away. There was no way Nobuhide could mistake that sound for anything else. It was unmistakably Catherine's voice.

Nobuhide couldn’t stay still anymore, and ran towards her.

The distance between them shrunk with each step they took.

Run, run, and run.

Even if his breathing became rough, Nobuhide’s steps still became stronger.

Soon, both of them reduced their paces, and approached each other. They stopped at the distance where they could feel each other’s breaths.

“Catherine...” Nobuhide embraced Catherine’s long neck.

As if to answer him, Catherine let out a soft snort.

Why did she follow him?

It was such a boorish question. However, the fact that Catherine followed him made Nobuhide happy.

“You are such a fool. Choosing a human over your friends.” Tears flowed out from Nobuhide’s eyes.

They were tears of happiness. Meanwhile, Catherine also let out a happy cry.

“I will not leave you ever again. Let’s go, together. We’ll be together forever.” He vowed.

Under the hot sun, Nobuhide and Catherine enjoyed their reunion for a long time.

The town was gone, but the Wolf tribe and Catherine were still on his side.

Nobuhide had not lost anything important.

Chapter 056 - Intermission: The Town Afterwards

“What is the meaning of this..?” General Rigrait, the commander of the army, questioned in surprise atop his horse as the Shugurin Dukedom’s army advanced towards the beastman town.

The beastman town was surrounded by a stone wall about 5 meters high, and inside, there should have been a huge castle wall that was 4 times bigger than the stone walls surrounding the town.

But now, what was the sight General Rigrait was greeted with?

The stone walls surrounding the town were gone. Furthermore, even the 20 meter high castle walls behind them were decreasing in size as the army advanced forward.

“What is going on here..?” General Rigrait groaned.

As the distance between them and the town shrank, the walls also shrank. It was like seeing the laws of physics acting in reverse.

“The group that previously came out from the town is suspicious.” A knight next to him reported.

To this, General Rigrait stroke his beard while humming, deep in thought.

Not too long ago, something rushed in the direction of the far west at high speeds. They could only see the cloud of sand raised, and weren’t able to perceive what caused it, so they couldn’t identify it.

The farmer soldiers from Count Zarabona’s territory, whom just joined the army, said they saw a “box of iron” when they attacked the town as soldiers of the Kingdom of Sandra.

It could run faster than any horse and could be ridden by dozens of people, or so the story went.

However, he doesn’t know if the “iron box” had anything to do with the current situation of the town.

“Well, it’s alright. The town will be much easier to conquer when there are no walls. We can investigate it after we take over the town.” In the end, General Rigrait couldn’t make any solid decisions.

The Shugurin Dukedom’s army didn’t stop even if there were abnormalities in the town, and simply advanced forward.

After a while, someone came running from the town It was the person from the Fish tribe who was acting as their spy.

The army stopped and let the person from the Fish tribe pass to meet General Rigrait.

“What is the situation of the town?” The general asked without further preamble.

“We of the Fish tribe were able to skillfully drive out the ruler, Fujiwara, from the town. But, I wonder if it was because Fujiwara has left that several things in the town disappeared.” The fish tribesman answered while kneeling down with narrowed eyes to make him seem more pleasant.

“Several of them have disappeared? Does this include the stone walls surrounding the town?” The general questioned.

“Yes!” Came the swift reply.

“Then, why do you say that the cause of the stone walls disappearing is because of Fujiwara leaving?” General Rigrait questioned further.

“It seems like the town was created using Fujiwara’s magic. When Fujiwara left, the town changed to become more advantageous for Fujiwara. He can freely create or erase anything in the town.” The fish tribesman reported.

“Muu....” General Rigrait grunted as he pondered.

To create a town and erase it was something he had never heard of before.

There was the art of creation through alchemy, but the scale of this was too different.

But, he can’t just say that the fishman was lying because he actually saw the town’s castle walls gradually disappear just now.

“Has Fujiwara already escaped?” The general asked after a short pause.

“Yes. They got into the iron box called ‘truck’ and left.” The fishman answered.

There were too many questions in his mind right now, but if he wanted to ascertain the truth, they would need to go to the town.

“If Fujiwara has already escaped, then I should be able to enter the town peacefully.” General Rigrait muttered.

“About that, it probably won’t go well. All the beastmen living in the town are currently hostile towards us. Even though they rebelled against Fujiwara, they seemed to have change of heart halfway.” The fishman explained. “The chief of our tribe was also attacked by them and sustained an injury, which was why he could not come here. They are dangerous. We don’t know if they will turn against your army or not.”

Upon hearing his words, General Rigrait frowned slightly. His eyes seemed to be gazing right through the fishman's mind.

The old residents of the town would certainly be hostile against the Fish tribe, but it doesn't seem like they will turn against the Shugurin Dukedom's army. He thought that this might be a trick by the Fish tribe to seize real power to get revenge against those beastmen.

Even when General Rigrait was looking straight into his eyes, the Fish tribesman doesn't even flinch. However, the general knows the nature of the Fish tribe well.

"Send a messenger. Bring the chief of each tribe here. If they do not come, I will consider this them intending to fight against us." General Rigrait issued the order to his subordinate. He was not foolish enough to believe everything the Fish tribe said.

"Eh? You won't kill them?" The fishman asked.

“Fool. Since Fujiwara has escaped, the people who know most about the town would be the beastmen.” The general spat.

Or rather, because the rebellion of the town had already succeeded, the Fish tribe doesn’t have any value anymore.

The messenger rode on a horse and headed to the town. Meanwhile, the army started advancing once more slowly.

After a while, the messenger returned with the chiefs of each tribe, and the army stopped again.

General Rigrait observed the group of chieftains who were brought in front of him.

Whether it’s because they had plenty of food to eat or not, they had quite a bit of flesh on them. Even so, the chiefs seemed remarkably tired and, as if they were wasting away.

All the chiefs knelt down quietly with their heads bowed.

When general Rigrait asked if they had any intentions to fight, they replied “no” feebly.

This way, the Shugurin Dukedom’s army advanced with each tribe’s chief as hostages, and was soon able to the town without resistance.

When the soldiers saw the buildings of the town, they let out surprised gasps. Even General Rigrait and the senior knights also had the same reactions.

While the colors and shapes looked the same, the lined-up houses looked rather unfamiliar. The townscape looked much more beautiful than that of the

Shugurin Dukedom’s.

Looking at the dukedom army, the chiefs felt proud about themselves. But, their faces rapidly sank into depression. It was because everything was given to them by Nobuhide.

Then, the army occupied half of the town, and the soldiers settled down under the roofs of the new houses.

“Wow! This is incredible!”

“It’s completely different from our houses which are full of cracks!”

The soldiers entered the houses and praised them endlessly.

Not only do the houses look wonderful on the outside, but the insides were splendid too. They didn't lose out to those high class inns in the city in any way.

It seemed like they could properly heal their fatigue from the long journey.

However, when people entered the houses, some people also left. The beastmen who lived there were driven out. For the time being, they were forced to live under the scorching sun.

Eventually, each chieftain was gathered in the mansion where General Rigrait stayed to be interrogated for information once again.

General Rigrait was sitting in the seat of honor in the innermost room of the mansion while the chiefs were sitting at the side. Soldiers with weapons were surrounding the chieftains. It was a breathtaking sight for the chieftains.

First, the general asked for the detailed account of the rebellion. The answer from the chieftains was the same as the story he had heard from the fishman.

“Hmm... As expected, Fujiwara was the one who created this town using magic as, huh?” The general mumbled.

Nobuhide created this town and then erased it. It was too difficult to

believe.

However, General Rigrait had confirmed that Nobuhide distorted the stone walls in the town in order to escape. Furthermore, the stone walls disappearing after the beastmen’s rebellion and Nobuhide’s escape were consistent with each other.

Even though General Rigrait felt that this was unbelievable, the power of Nobuhide seemed to be the real deal.

“That Fujiwara... Is he a god or a devil? This is something beyond the power of a human.” The general stated, deeply impressed.

It was a feeling of being refreshed despite knowing the depths of the powers of his opponent. Although he had schemed against his opponent, General Rigrait actually wanted to meet and talk to him directly.

The chieftains who heard the general’s commentary frowned. When the power of Nobuhide was mentioned by other once again, it pierced their hearts deeply, reminding the chieftains once more of the regret they felt for betraying him.

“Still, how merciful of him to at least leave you these houses? Hahaha, even though he’s an enemy, he really is an admirable guy. Despite being betrayed, Fujiwara still left houses for you to live in.” The general laughed happily.

Showing mercy to those who betrayed you was a stupid act. It was extremely foolish. Does Nobuhide intended to become saint? The general laughed once again for some time.

However, Nobuhide did not actually plan to show such mercy. Even though they didn’t sign any contract, since the houses have already been occupied by the beastmen for several years, his ability made its own judgment based on this, and transferred [ownership] of the houses to the beastmen on its own accord.

Nonetheless, if Nobuhide managed to keep his composure when he was leaving, he might really have left the houses to the beastmen out of mercy.

“However, I am not as lenient as Fujiwara. I will have all of you tell me what you know. It would be better if you don’t talk about Fujiwara. If you do, consider it as having thrown your life away.” The general glared with cold eyes.

Because Nobuhide was such a nice person, when the chieftains looked at the compassionless eyes of General Rigrait, it felt as if there was ice in their hearts.

After that, the chieftains explained everything about life living in the town,

and weapons such as the cannons.

A week after the occupation of the town by the Shugurin Dukedom's army, the military received a new variety of seedlings, and information that seemed to be useful for the development of new weapons.

However, they weren't able to get more information on spices, which was the main reason for them to come all the way here. Thus, there was nothing else they could obtain from here.

General Rigrait was thinking how to deal with the town's future.

Originally, the Shugurin Dukedom had planned to make this place a colony.

But, this town was too far from their territory, and even the walls protecting the town were gone. Not to mention, they were currently in a hostile relationship with the Kingdom of Sandra. Even if Shugurin Dukedom stationed their army in the area, it would still be too difficult to protect the town from that country.

Thus, the army decided to return back to their country without turning the beastman town into their colony.

At the time of their departure, these were the words General Rigrait had for the chieftains.

“You should thank Fujiwara. If I ignore his mercy for you, I will feel ashamed to be of the same race as him. We also have mercy, at the very least. So all of you should just live here quietly.”

It’s not like General Rigrat was moved by Nobuhide’s compassion in particular. It was more to show how benevolent human beings were.

Nobuhide, who showed sympathy to the beastmen, was a human, and he, himself, was also a human. Even though he was betrayed by the beastmen, Nobuhide’s act of kindness somehow satisfied General Rigrait’s ego as the same human being.

The thought of dishonoring Nobuhide’s kindness only occupied a small corner in his mind.

◆

When the Shugurin Dukedom’s army left, the town became lordless once again.

Firstly, the old beastmen kicked out the Fish tribe and the other newcomers from the town. While doing so, although there were a few skirmishes, the Fish tribe was able to escape north relatively quickly.

This could be said to be the difference between those who have the spirit to protect the town and those who think of this place as an inn.

The beastmen thought that when the Fish tribe was gone, they would be able to go back to their peaceful time from the past.

However, it was not enough. There was neither Nobuhide nor the Wolf tribe there.

What disappeared from the town was not only Nobuhide and the Wolf tribe.

The water wells and toilets were also gone. The bathrooms had also disappeared, and the camels, too, were gone.

The beastmen lost many things.

A young child from a certain family was asking their father why the town had completely changed.

“Why did the bath and water well disappear? Where is Fujiwara-sama?”

“If you become a good kid, someday, Fujiwara-sama will come back. If so, everything will be go back to how it was like before.” The father answered with a troubled expression.

The father only could say that. The adults did not have the courage to confess their sins to their children. They only could caress their heads and lie.

Now, even getting water to the town was difficult everyday. Even if there was a river nearby, there was still a big difference in having a well with a hand pump right in front of their eyes.

Day after day, most of the time was spent to bring water necessary for their daily life from the river. As a result, the children were being urged to work too.

Besides that, problems with the lavatories and the fuel needed for a fire also piled up endlessly.

Furthermore, disputes among the tribes also started to occur. For example, about the food supply.

Nobuhide had delegated the construction work to the Goblin and Kobold tribes. Thus, they had tax-free fields, but the surplus from those alone wouldn’t be enough for all the tribes.

In other words, there was no means to obtain food at the moment. Of course, they would cultivate the fields in the future, but until they could harvest their crops, each tribe would need to receive food from the Goblin and Kobold tribes.

But, they were reluctant to share their food. They wanted to store as much food as much as possible in case of any potential emergencies. Since Nobuhide was no longer here, they needed to think about their own tribes first.

But, as the days and months passed, the tribes started to cooperate with each other, and various problems were slowly being solved.

After overcoming many hardships, the town started to operate once again.

However, life didn’t become easier.

Before long, a year had already passed. Many people realized that Nobuhide was not returning any more.

The beastmen were so busy everyday that they even forgot about the old days. Some even thought that those days were just a dream or an illusion.

However, there were still some who were still thinking about the old days, and couldn’t move forward.

It was a young man from the Deer tribe, the one who had served as the chief a year ago. As he had become lost in anxiety, and was not able to fulfil his job as the chief, he was discharged from his post.

Occasionally, the youth would gaze at a pendant all day and reminisce about the old days.

Today happened to be the day he did that. The youth was looking at the pendant, which he had taken off from his neck, in his home.

Then, his wife, who had returned from work, yelled at him upon seeing that.

“You are still holding onto such things! That’s just junk! There is no meaning in that anymore!”

With that, the pendant was taken by his wife. It was thrown away, and rolled about on the floor.

“Aah..!” While crawling on the floor, the youth chased after the pendant.

The pendant was the proof of him winning the athletic meet. His pride, glory and self confidence; things that were full of brilliance for the youth were packed in it.

No, that was not all.

Every day he spent laughing with Nobuhide and the Wolf tribe, the days he spent happily without needing to worry about anything... Every time he saw the pendant, he would remember the memories of his everyday life while facing tomorrow.

However, the beastmen couldn’t afford to look for tomorrow now. They were desperately working everyday in order to live day by day. Even so, it could be said that it was still much better than the life they had before they came here.

However, since he already knew what a fulfilled life was, his life now seemed endlessly dull. Thus, the young man of the Deer tribe would occasionally indulge himself in this way.

There were still people who were not able to wake up from that dream...

Chapter 057 - Interlude: Nagai Masaya ①

There were 112 Japanese people gathered by the God. They were given cards which contained a special power by the god, and left for another world. While doing so, God told them that he would send them to a place where they would be able to build their own foothold.

Like what he had said, most people were living safely in the place where they had been sent to.

For example, a girl who got [Water Magic Talent] [Small] [★★] was transferred to one of the towns in that world. Currently, she is looking after an orphan, and lived her everyday life as a water seller.

In addition, there was also a young man, who got [All Weapons Talent] [Average] [★★★], who saved a merchant from bandits, and became the merchant's escort. Furthermore, he fell in love with the merchant's daughter at first sight. Today, he spends his days busily as a successor candidate for the firm.

And then, there was one male high school student——

◆

(When was it that I began to seriously study?)

It was a question of a male high school student, Nagai Masaya, who was transferred to a different world. The question arose during his elementary school years.

Nagai wasn’t particularly a smart child. He didn’t think much about the past, and spent everyday playing around like any normal kid would.

Then one day, he got 100 points on a test. Even though it was only once by chance, he felt good when he got praised, so it resulted in him beginning to study more.

However, when he was praised everyone around him, he felt more comfortable than what he thought was possible.

When Nagai's achievement was announced in front of everyone, the teacher who gave back the test paper praised him for a job well done. When he returned back to his seat, the girl sitting next to him said that he was really smart. When he returned home, his father felt proud and said that he always thought Masaya could do it since he was a person with ability.

It was certainly a pleasant sensation.

Everytime he got praised, a sense of euphoria similar to getting high on drugs controlled Nagai's heart.

From that point on, Nagai became an honor student. This result could be said to be due to his own effort.

Nagai spent everyday studying and training his body.

There were not many who made a certain goal and put in effort as an elementary student. At most, it was usually a desire to study, as was nagged by their parents.

But, Nagai continued his efforts by his own will. Then, that effort soon produced results.

He got high scores each time he took a test, and he also played an active role in physical education classes. He was recognized by everyone as someone who was both smart and good at sports.

However, Nagai thought that this was not enough.

Eventually, it became natural for him to get full marks on tests, and Nagai was also recognized as the number one in sports too. The teachers and his parents praised him, and his classmates also gazed enviously at Nagai.

Some people even start speaking ill of him because of jealousy. But since it was just grumbling from losers, there was no need to worry about it.

Then, it became natural for Nagai to be the best in everything. The feeling of being better than anyone else and being praised felt very good.

But, effort had a limit.

When Nagai was a middle schooler, in the ranking list for test results, placed second for the first time in a while. In sports, someone with much better talent than him appeared.

It was humiliation.

He lacked talent. This was a stage that couldn’t be achieved by effort alone. He didn’t want to admit it, so Nagai worked hard desperately. He continued to struggle while looking at the top.

However, he couldn’t reach it.

For Nagai, being number one had become natural, so he could not bear to have someone better than himself. He was much better than everyone. He cannot be inferior to anyone.

He persuaded himself like that.

But, when he entered high school, Nagai chose a 2nd rate high school in the area. In order to be the first in high school, he chose a 2nd rate high school.

Shame.

He choose defeat in order to satisfy his own desire. This became a mark of shame in Nagai's heart. That one mark gradually grew inside his heart.

When he became a high school student, Nagai looked down on others in his mind. He thought of how superior he was, and how stupid everyone else was.

To conceal his shame, he told himself that he was superior.

Moreover, he could not permit anyone threatening his place, so any person who stood out was crushed by him. Of course, it couldn't be too conspicuous an act. He needed to be crafty so that they don't realize his ill intentions.

The factor which make him put in effort in the past to improve himself

was no longer there. It went into a totally different direction instead.

One day, he, too, will become an ordinary human.

Nagai spent his life with that unspeakable uneasiness inside himself.

Then, that time came. The old man who claimed to be God appeared in front of Nagai.

In the morning, Nagai noticed he was inside a white room while he was on the train to school. He was not alone. There were also people who got on the same train as him.

Then, what appeared before them was a person who claimed to be God.

“You people will live in another world.” God decreed.

Inside the white room, those who had chosen a card disappeared one after another.

Nagai also chose a card before closing his eyes as he was then wrapped in a dazzling light.

When he opened his eyes, he was in an unknown place.

“Where is this..?” Nagai woke up on a luxurious bed. Lying on his back, he looked at the unfamiliar canopy.

Then, there was a loud cry.

When he raised his upper body, he saw an elderly caucasian man there. From the clothes he wore, it gave an impression of sophistication and respectability. However, those were not clothes from the modern times. They were the so-called medieval styled clothing.

Looking at the old man, Nagai “knew” that he was a doctor.

“...What happened here?” He looked around restlessly as he asked.

He was in a gorgeous room adorned with various pieces of luxurious furniture.

Then, Nagai had a “recollection” about this room.

“Is your mind not clear yet? Well, it’s natural since you have been asleep for three days. Please excuse me.” The old doctor placed his hand on Nagai’s forehead, most likely measuring his temperature.

Next, he looked at Nagai’s eyes and tongue.

“Juliano-sama, please stretch out your arm.” The doctor instructed.

Juliano.

The old man called Nagai that.

His name was Nagai Masaya, not Juliano. However, Nagai strangely accepted the name naturally, and stretched his arm out as he was told.

Nagai had some memories, not as Nagai Masaya, but as Juliano Gavino Vassari.

The old doctor took his pulse.

At that moment, Nagai remembered the card he drew.

[Become a Lord] [★★★★★]

Nagai looked at his own hands. They were very white, like the old doctor’s skin colour. It was a kind of paleness that Nagai Masaya, who was Japanese, could never obtain.

A human named Nagai Masaya was now possessing the body of a man named Juliano Gavino Vassari, who had the position of a lord.

Nagai thought about it.

“Hmm... There are no abnormalities. It’s hard to believe that you were about to die. But, we should not be careless. You need to rest for the time being.” The old doctor advised.

“I understand.” Nagai nodded.

“Then, do you remember why you were on the brink of death?” The doctor asked.

Nagai nodded once more to that question.

Inside his head, there were memories of Juliano when he was about to die.

Juliano was in the middle of lunch. When he was drinking wine, he suddenly felt pain strike his chest.

Perhaps Juliano died then and there, and then, Nagai understood that his soul entered the dead Juliano’s body.

“Then, please rest. I will come back before dinner time.” After saying that, the old doctor left the room.

The ones left in the room besides him were one maid and two knights guarding the door.

Nagai laid down on the bed again. He thought carefully while looking up at the canopy.

What he got was a card called [Become a Lord]. It had five stars written on it. It was not difficult to imagine that the number of stars present represented the worth of the card.

Then, was five stars considered high or low?

A male student who first drew a card... His card should have been [Spear Talent] [Big]. If there was [Big], then [Small] and [Medium] would definitely exist too.

(If [Small] is one star, then is [Big] three stars?)

It’s too simple when you think about it, but when he considered the difference in value between an individual talent and a position which bound the person who had it to a lord, it does not seem like a mistake.

While thinking about such things, the hallway became restless. Several footsteps could be heard from outside of the room. Immediately after, the door of the room opened.

“Ohh, Juliano..! Thank god..!” The ones who entered the room were Juliano’s mother and her maids.

“Why, if it isn’t Mother. As you can see, Juliano is safe.” Nagai sat up and smiled radiantly.

Juliano’s mother wiped away a few tears with her fingers. It seemed like she was really relieved, and called out to Nagai.

“Oh... Oh..! It’s fine as long as you’re alright..." She stated, choked up. “Mother didn’t know what to do when you didn’t wake up for a long time... Mother was really worried, you know?”

However...

“Hm, were you worried if I would die properly?” Nagai smiled.

“Wha-?!” She exclaimed.

“Capture this person. She is the main culprit behind this.” Nagai ordered.

“Wa-Wait! What are you saying?!” The woman panicked.

Before Nagai’s soul entered Juliano’s body, he was already aware that his mother want to install his youngest brother as the head of the family. That was why she thought of Juliano as a hindrance.

However, Juliano didn’t do anything. Because of his affection for his parent, he could not aim for her life, and hesitated.

The mother who had lost affection for Juliano as opposed to Juliano, who still had affection for his mother... That was why he was killed.

And now, Nagai, who had become Juliano, did not feel any affection to this woman. This was because his mother was in another world and the woman in this place was only a stranger.

“My beloved Julia! This must be a mistake! Aah, Julia!” Juliano’s mother was forced to leave by the guards who bodily dragged her out by her arms.

Nagai watched her leave without any emotion at all.

Before long, the door closed, and he turned to face the front once more.

“A lord, huh... That’s not bad...” He muttered.

Nagai looked at Juliano’s young, elegant appearance and grinned.